

## **The Project Gutenberg eBook of Lucasta, by Richard Lovelace**

This ebook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this ebook or online at [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org). If you are not located in the United States, you'll have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

Title: Lucasta

Author: Richard Lovelace

Release date: October 1, 1996 [EBook #703]

Most recently updated: January 1, 2021

Language: English

\*\*\* START OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK LUCASTA \*\*\*

Produced by Gary R. Young.

# **LUCASTA.**

By

Richard Lovelace

**TO WILLIAM HAZLITT, ESQ., OF THE MIDDLE  
TEMPLE, A REGISTRAR OF THE COURT OF  
BANKRUPTCY IN LONDON,**

This Little Volume

**IS INSCRIBED AS A SLIGHT TESTIMONY OF THE GREATEST RESPECT, BY HIS AFFECTIONATE SON, THE  
EDITOR.**

# CONTENTS.

## PART I.

|                                                                                             | PAGE |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|------|
| Dedication                                                                                  | 3    |
| Verses addressed to the Author                                                              | 5    |
| I. Poems Addressed or Relating To Lucasta.                                                  |      |
| Song. To Lucasta. Going beyond the Seas                                                     | 25   |
| Song. To Lucasta. Going to the Warres                                                       | 26   |
| A Paradox                                                                                   | 27   |
| Song. To Amarantha, that she would Dishevell her Haire                                      | 29   |
| Sonnet                                                                                      | 31   |
| Ode. To Lucasta. The Rose                                                                   | 31   |
| Love Conquer'd. A Song                                                                      | 33   |
| A Loose Saraband                                                                            | 34   |
| Orpheus to Woods                                                                            | 37   |
| Orpheus to Beasts                                                                           | 37   |
| Dialogue. Lucasta, Alexis                                                                   | 39   |
| Sonnet                                                                                      | 41   |
| Lucasta Weeping. Song                                                                       | 42   |
| To Lucasta, from Prison. An Epode                                                           | 43   |
| Lucasta's Fanne, with a Looking-glasse in it                                                | 46   |
| Lucasta, taking the Waters at Tunbridge                                                     | 48   |
| To Lucasta. Ode Lyrick                                                                      | 50   |
| Lucasta paying her Obsequies to the Chast Memory of my<br>Dearest Cosin Mrs. Bowes Barne[s] | 51   |
| Upon the Curtaine of Lucasta's Picture, it was thus Wrought                                 | 53   |
| Lucasta's World. Epode                                                                      | 53   |
| The Apostacy of One, and but One Lady                                                       | 54   |
| Amyntor from beyond the Sea to Alexis. A Dialogue                                           | 56   |
| Calling Lucasta from her Retirement                                                         | 58   |
| Amarantha, a Pastoral                                                                       | 60   |
| II. Poems Addressed to Ellinda.                                                             |      |
| To Ellinda, that lately I have not written                                                  | 74   |
| Ellinda's Glove                                                                             | 75   |
| Being Treated. To Ellinda                                                                   | 76   |
| To Ellinda, upon his late Recovery. A Paradox                                               | 79   |
| III. Miscellaneous Poems                                                                    |      |
| To Chloe, courting her for his Friend                                                       | 81   |
| Gratiana Dauncing and Singing                                                               | 82   |
| Amyntor's Grove                                                                             | 84   |
| The Scrutinie                                                                               | 89   |
| Princesse Loysa Drawing                                                                     | 90   |
| A Forsaken Lady to her False Servant                                                        | 92   |
| The Grassehopper. To My Noble Friend,<br>Mr. Charles Cotton [the elder]                     | 94   |
| An Elegie on the Death of Mrs. Cassandra Cotton                                             | 97   |
| The Vintage to the Dungeon. A Song                                                          | 99   |
| On the Death of Mrs. Elizabeth Filmer. An Elegiacall Epitaph                                | 100  |
| To My Worthy Friend Mr. Peter Lilly                                                         | 102  |
| The Lady A[nne] L[ovelace]. My Asylum in a Great Extremity                                  | 104  |
| A Lady with a Falcon on her Fist. To the Honourable<br>my Cousin A[nne] L[oveace]           | 108  |
| A Prologue to the Scholars                                                                  | 110  |
| The Epilogue                                                                                | 111  |

Against the Love of Great Ones 113  
To Althea, from Prison 117  
Sonnet. To Generall Goring, after the Pacification at Berwicke 120  
Sir Thomas Wortley's Sonnet 122  
The Answer 123  
A Guiltlesse Lady Imprisoned; after Penanced 124  
To His Deare Brother Colonel F[rancis] L[ovelace] 125  
To a Lady that desired me I would beare my part with her  
in a Song 126  
Valiant Love<TOC.1> 131  
La Bella Bona Roba. To My Lady H. 133  
Sonnet. "I Cannot Tell," &c. 134  
A la Bourbon 135  
The Faire Begger 136  
A Dialogue betwixt Cordanus and Amoret 138

<This is approximately the original location of footnote <TOC.1>. This footnote has been moved to a position after the poem 'La Bella Bona Roba.'>

IV. Commendatory and Other Verses, prefixed to  
Various Publications between 1638 and 1647.

An Elegie. Princesse Katherine Borne, Christened, Buried  
in one Day (1638) 140  
Clitophon and Lucippe translated. To the Ladies (1638) 143  
To My Truly Valiant, Learned Friend; who in his Booke  
resolv'd the Art Gladiatory into the Mathematicks (1638) 146  
To Fletcher Reviv'd (1647) 148

PART II.

I. Poems Addressed or Relating to Lucasta.

Dedication 155  
To Lucasta. Her Reserved Looks 157  
Lucasta Laughing 157  
Night. To Lucasta 158  
Love Inthron'd 159  
Her Muffe 160  
A Black Patch on Lucasta's Face 162  
Another 163  
To Lucasta 165  
To Lucasta 165  
Lucasta at the Bath 166  
The Ant 168

II. Miscellaneous Poems.

Song. Strive not, &c. 170  
In Allusion to the French Song: "N'entendez vous pas  
ce Language" 171  
Courante Monsieur 173  
A Loose Saraband 174  
The Falcon 176  
Love made in the First Age. To Chloris 180  
To a Lady with Child that ask'd an Old Shirt 183  
Song. In mine own Monument I lye, &c. 184  
Another. I did believe, &c. 184  
Ode. You are deceiv'd, &c. 185  
The Duell 187  
Cupid far gone 188

A Mock Song 190  
A Fly caught in a Cobweb 191  
A Fly about a Glasse of Burnt Claret 193  
Female Glory 196  
A Dialogue. Lute and Voice 197  
A Mock Charon. Dialogue 198  
The Toad and Spyder. A Duell 199  
The Snayl 207  
Another 209  
The Triumphs of Philamore and Amoret 211  
Advice to my best Brother, Coll: Francis Lovelace 218  
Paris's Second Judgement 221  
Peinture. A Panegyrick to the best Picture of Friendship,  
Mr. Pet. Lilly 222  
An Anniversary on the Hymeneals of my Noble Kinsman,  
Thomas Stanley, Esq. 227  
On Sanazar's being honoured with 600 Duckets by the  
Clarissimi of Venice 229

III. Commendatory Verses, prefixed to Various  
Publications between 1652 and 1657.

To My Dear Friend, Mr. E[ldred] R[evett] on his Poems moral  
and divine 241  
On the Best, Last, and only Remaining Comedy of Mr. Fletcher,  
"The Wild-Goose Chase" (1652) 245  
To My Noble Kinsman Thomas Stanley, Esq.; on his Lyrick Poems  
composed by Mr. John Gamble (1656) 247  
To Dr. F. B[eale]; on his Book of Chesse (1656) 249  
To the Genius of Mr. John Hall (1657) 250

Translations 253

Elegies on the Death of the Author 279

## INTRODUCTION.

There is scarcely an UN-DRAMATIC writer of the Seventeenth Century, whose poems exhibit so many and such gross corruptions as those of the author of LUCASTA. In the present edition, which is the first attempt to present the productions of a celebrated and elegant poet to the admirers of this class of literature in a readable shape, both the text and the pointing have been amended throughout, the original reading being always given in the footnotes; but some passages still remain, which I have not succeeded in elucidating to my satisfaction, and one or two which have defied all my attempts at emendation, though, as they stand, they are unquestionably nonsense. It is proper to mention that several rather bold corrections have been hazarded in the course of the volume; but where this has been done, the deviation from the original has invariably been pointed out in the notes.

On the title-page of the copy of LUCASTA, 1649, preserved among the King's Pamphlets in the British Museum, the original possessor has, according to his usual practice, marked the date of purchase, viz., June 21; perhaps, and indeed probably, that was also the date of publication. A copy of LUCASTA, 1649, occasionally appears in catalogues, purporting to have belonged to Anne, Lady Lovelace; but the autograph which it contains was taken from a copy of Massinger's BONDMAN (edit. 1638, 4to.), which her Ladyship once owned. This copy of Lovelace's LUCASTA is bound up with the copy of the POSTHUME POEMS, once in the possession of Benjamin Rudyerd, Esq., grandson and heir of the distinguished Sir Benjamin Rudyerd, as appears also from his autograph on the title.<1.1>

In the original edition of the two parts of LUCASTA, 1649-59, the arrangement of the poems appears, like that of the text, to have been left to chance, and the result has been a total absence of method. I have therefore felt it part of my duty to systematise the contents of the volume, and, so far as it lay in my power, to place the various pieces of which it consisted in their proper order; all the odes, sonnets, &c. addressed or referring to the lady who is concealed under the names of LUCASTA and AMARANTHA have now been, for the first time, brought together; and the copies of commendatory and gratulatory verses, with one exception prefixed by Lovelace to various publications by friends during

his life-time, either prior to the appearance of the first part of his own poems in 1649, or between that date and the issue of his Remains ten years later, have been placed by themselves, as an act of justice to the writer, of whose style and genius they are, as is generally the case with all compositions of the kind, by no means favourable specimens. The translations from Catullus, Ausonius, &c. have been left as they stood; they are, for the most part, destitute of merit; but as they were inserted by the Poet's brother, when he edited the posthumous volume, I did not think it right to disturb them, and they have been retained in their full integrity.

Lovelace's LUCASTA was included by the late S. W. Singer, Esq., in his series of "Early English Poets;" but that gentleman, besides striking out certain passages, which he, somewhat unaccountably and inconsistently, regarded as indelicate, omitted a good deal of preliminary matter in the form of commendatory verses which, though possibly of small worth, were necessary to render the book complete; it is possible, that Mr. Singer made use of a copy of LUCASTA which was deficient at the commencement. It may not be generally known that, independently of its imperfections in other respects, Mr. Singer's reprint abounds with the grossest blunders.

The old orthography has been preserved intact in this edition; but with respect to the employment of capitals, the entirely arbitrary manner in which they are introduced into the book as originally published, has made it necessary to reduce them, as well as the singularly capricious punctuation, to modern rules. At the same time, in those cases where capitals seemed more characteristic or appropriate, they have been retained.

It is a singular circumstance, that Mr. Singer (in common with Wood, Bliss, Ellis, Headley, and all other biographers,) overlooked the misprint of ARAMANTHA for AMARANTHA, which the old compositor made, with one or two exceptions, wherever the word occurred. In giving a correct representation of the original title-page, I have been obliged to print ARAMANTHA.

In the hope of discovering the exact date of Lovelace's birth and baptism, I communicated with the Rev. A. J. Pearman, incumbent of Bethersden, near Ashford, and that gentleman obligingly examined the registers for me, but no traces of Lovelace's name are to be found.

**W. C. H.**

Kensington, August 12, 1863.

<1.1> Mr. B. R. was a somewhat diligent collector of books, both English and foreign. On the fly-leaves of his copy of Rosse's MYSTAGOGUS POETICUS, 1648, 8vo., he has written the names of a variety of works, of which he was at the time seemingly in recent possession.

## BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICE.

With the exception of Sir Egerton Brydges, who contributed to the GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE for 1791-2 a series of articles on the life and writings of the subject of the present memoir, all the biographers of Richard Lovelace have contented themselves with following the account left by Anthony Wood of his short and unhappy career. I do not think that I can do better than commence, at least, by giving word for word the narrative of Wood in his own language, to which I purpose to add such additional particulars in the form of notes or otherwise, as I may be able to supply. But the reader must not expect much that is new: for I regret to say that, after the most careful researches, I have not improved, to any large extent, the state of knowledge respecting this elegant poet and unfortunate man.

"Richard Lovelace," writes Wood, "the eldest son of Sir William Lovelace<2.1> of Woollidge in Kent, knight, was born in that country [in 1618], educated in grammar learning in Charterhouse<2.2> School near London, became a gent. commoner of Gloucester Hall in the beginning of the year 1634,<2.3> and in that of his age sixteen, being then accounted the most amiable and beautiful person that ever eye beheld; a person also of innate modesty, virtue, and courtly deportment, which made him then, but especially after, when he retired to the great city, much admired and adored by the female sex. In 1636, when the king and queen were for some days entertained at Oxon, he was, at the request of a great lady belonging to the queen, made to the Archbishop of Canterbury [Laud], then Chancellor of the University, actually created, among other persons of quality, Master of Arts, though but of two years' standing; at which time his conversation being made public, and consequently his ingenuity and generous soul discovered, he became as much admired by the male, as before by the female, sex. After he had left the University, he retired in great splendour to the court, and being taken into the favour of Lord George Goring, afterwards Earl of Norwich, was by him adopted a soldier, and sent in the quality of an ensign, in the Scotch expedition, an. 1639. Afterwards, in the second expedition, he was

commissionated a captain in the same regiment, and in that time wrote a tragedy called THE SOLDIER, but never acted, because the stage was soon after suppressed. After the pacification of Berwick, he retired to his native country, and took possession [of his estate] at Lovelace Place, in the parish of Bethersden,<2.4> at Canterbury, Chart, Halden, &c., worth, at least, <pounds>500 per annum. About which time he [being then on the commission of the peace] was made choice of by the whole body of the county of Kent at an assize, to deliver the Kentish petition<2.5> to the House of Commons, for the restoring the king to his rights, and for settling the government, &c. For which piece of service he was committed [April 30, 1642] to the Gatehouse at Westminster,<2.6> where he made that celebrated song called, STONE WALLS DO NOT A PRISON MAKE, &c. After three or four months' [six or seven weeks'] imprisonment, he had his liberty upon bail of <pounds>40,000 [<pounds>4000?] not to stir out of the lines of communication without a pass from the speaker. During the time of this confinement to London, he lived beyond the income of his estate, either to keep up the credit and reputation of the king's cause by furnishing men with horses and arms, or by relieving ingenious men in want, whether scholars, musicians, soldiers, &c. Also, by furnishing his two brothers, Colonel Franc. Lovelace, and Captain William Lovelace (afterwards slain at Caermarthen)<2.7> with men and money for the king's cause, and his other brother, called Dudley Posthumus Lovelace, with moneys for his maintenance in Holland, to study tactics and fortification in that school of war. After the rendition of Oxford garrison, in 1646, he formed a regiment for the service of the French king, was colonel of it, and wounded at Dunkirk;<2.8> and in 1648, returning into England, he, with Dudley Posthumus before mentioned, then a captain under him, were both committed prisoners to Peter House,<2.9> in London, where he framed his poems for the press, entitled, LUCASTA: EPODES, ODES, SONNETS, SONGS, &c., Lond. 1649, Oct. The reason why he gave that title was because, some time before, he had made his amours to a gentlewoman of great beauty and fortune, named Lucy Sacheverell, whom he usually called LUX CASTA; but she, upon a stray report that Lovelace was dead of his wound received at Dunkirk, soon after married.<2.10> He also wrote ARAMANTHA [Amarantha], A PASTORAL, printed with LUCASTA.<2.11> Afterwards a musical composition of two parts was set to part of it by Henry Lawes,<2.12> sometimes servant to king Charles I., in his public and private music.

"After the murther of king Charles I. Lovelace was set at liberty, and, having by that time consumed all his estate,<2.13> grew very melancholy (which brought him at length into a consumption), became very poor in body and purse, was the object of charity, went in ragged cloaths (whereas when he was in his glory he wore cloth of gold and silver), and mostly lodged in obscure and dirty places, more befitting the worst of beggars and poorest of servants, &c. After his death his brother Dudley, before mentioned, made a collection of his poetical papers, fitted them for the press, and entitled them LUCASTA: POSTHUME POEMS, Lond. 1659,<2.14> Oct., the second part, with his picture before them.<2.15> These are all the things that he hath extant; those that were never published were his tragedy, called THE SOLDIER or SOLDIERS, before mentioned; and his comedy, called THE SCHOLAR,<2.16> which he composed at sixteen years of age, when he came first to Gloucester hall, acted with applause afterwards in Salisbury Court. He died in a very mean lodging in Gunpowder Alley,<2.17> near Shoe Lane,<2.18> and was buried at the west-end of the church of S. Bride, alias Bridget, in London, near to the body of his kinsman Will. Lovelace, of Gray's Inn, Esq., in sixteen hundred fifty and eight,<2.19> having before been accounted by all those that well knew him to have been a person well versed in the Greek<2.20> and Latin<2.21> poets, in music, whether practical or theoretical, instrumental or vocal, and in other things befitting a gentleman. Some of the said persons have also added, in my hearing, that his common discourse was not only significant and witty, but incomparably graceful, which drew respect from all men and women. Many other things I could now say of him, relating either to his most generous mind in his prosperity, or dejected estate in his worst state of poverty, but for brevity's sake I shall now pass them by. At the end of his Posthume Poems are several elegies written on him by eminent poets of that time, wherein you may see his just character."

Such is Wood's account; it is to be regretted that that writer did not supply the additional information, which he tantalizes us by saying that he possessed, and could have published, had he not been afraid of being tedious. His love of brevity is, in this case, most provoking.

As might be expected, the Journals of Parliament cast additional light on the personal connexion of Lovelace with the Kentish Petition of 1642, which was for the GENERAL redress of existing grievances, not, as the editor of the VERNEY PAPERS seems to have considered, merely for the adjustment of certain points relative to the Militia. Parliamentary literature has not a very strong fascination for the editors of old authors, and the biographers of Lovelace have uniformly overlooked the mine of information which lies in the LORDS' AND COMMONS' JOURNALS. The subject was apparently introduced, for the first time, into Parliament on the 28th March, 1642, when a conference of both Houses took place, respecting "a petition from Kent, which, praying for a Restoration of the Bishops, Liturgy and Common Prayer, and other constitutional measures, was voted seditious and against privilege and the peace of the kingdom;" on the same occasion, Lord Bristol and Mr. Justice Mallett were committed to the Tower for having in their possession a copy of the document. On the 7th April it

was ordered by both Houses, that the Kentish Petition should be burned by the hands of the common hangman.

On the 28th April, the Commons acquainted the Upper House, by Mr. Oliver Cromwell, "that a great meeting was to be held next day on Blackheath, to back the rejected Kentish Petition."<2.22>

Two days later, a strange scene occurred at Westminster.  
Let the Commons' Journals tell the story in their own language:—

"30 April, 1642. The House being informed that divers gentlemen of the county of Kent were at the door, that desired to present a petition to the House;

"They were called in, presented their Petition, and withdrew.

"And their Petition was read, and appeared to be the same that was formerly burnt, by order of both Houses, by the hands of the common hangman. Captain LEIGH reports that, being at the Quarter Sessions held at MAIDSTONE, he observed certain passages which he delivered in writing.

"Captain Lovelace, who presented the Petition, was called in; and Mr. Speaker was commanded to ask him, from whose hand he had this Petition, and who gave him warrant to present it.

"Mr. GEO. CHUTE delivered him [he replied] the Petition the next day after the Assizes.'

"The gentlemen [he continued], that were assembled at BLACKHEATH, commanded him to deliver it.'

"[The Speaker then inquired] whether he knew that the like was burnt by the order of this House, and that some were here questioned for the business.

"He understood a general rumour, that some gentlemen were questioned.

"He had heard a fortnight since, that the like Petition was burned by the hand of the common hangman.

"He knew nothing of the bundle of printed petitions.'

"He likewise said, 'that there was a petition at the Quarter Sessions, disavowed by all the Justices there, which he tore.'

"Sir William Boteler was likewise called in, [and] asked when he was at Yorke.

"[He] answered, 'On Wednesday last was sevensnight, he came from Yorke, and came to his house in London.

"He heard of a petition that was never delivered.

"He never heard of any censure of the Parliament.

"He heard that a paper was burnt for being irregularly burnt [?presented].

"He had heard that the Petition, that went under the name of the Kentish Petition, was burnt by the hands of the common hangman.

"He never heard of any order of either, [or] of both, the Houses concerning [the Petition].

"He was at Hull on Thursday or Friday was a sevensnight: as he came from Yorke, he took Hull in the way. He had heard, that Sir Roger Twisden was questioned for the like Petition.

"He was yesterday at BLACKHEATH.'

"Resolved, upon the question, that Captain Lovelace shall be presently Committed prisoner to the Gatehouse.

"Resolved, upon the question, that Sir William Boteler shall be presently committed prisoner to the Fleet.

"Ordered, that the sergeant shall apprehend them, and carry them in safe custody, and deliver them as prisoners to the several prisons aforesaid."

On the 4th May, 1642, the House of Commons ordered Mr. Whittlock and others to prepare a charge against Mr. Lovelace and Sir William Boteler with all expedition; but nothing further is heard of the

matter till the 17th June, When Lovelace<2.23> and Boteler petitioned the House separately for their release from custody. Hereupon Sir William was discharged on finding personal bail to the extent of <pounds>10,000, with a surety for <pounds>5000; and in the case of his companion in misfortune it was ordered, on the question, that "he be forthwith bailed upon GOOD security." This "good security," surely, did not reach the sum mentioned by Wood, namely, <pounds>40,000; but it is likely that the author of the ATHENAE is ONLY wrong by a cypher, and that the amount fixed was <pounds>4000, as it has been already suggested. Thus Lovelace's confinement did not exceed seven weeks in duration, and the probability, is that the sole inconvenience, which he subsequently experienced, was the loss of the bail.

The description left by Wood and Aubrey of the end of Lovelace can only be reconciled with the fact, that his daughter and heiress conveyed Kingsdown, Hever,<2.24> and a moiety of Chipsted, to the Cokes by marriage with Mr. Henry Coke, by presuming that those manors were entailed; while Lovelace Place, as well perhaps as Bayford and Goodneston, not being similarly secured, were sold to defray the owner's incumbrances. At any rate it is not, upon the whole, very probable that he died in a hovel, in a state of absolute poverty;<2.25> that he received a pound a week (equal to about <pounds>4 of our money) from two friends, Cotton and another, Aubrey himself admits; and we may rest satisfied that, however painful the contrast may have been between the opening and close of that career, the deplorable account given in the ATHENAE, and in the so-called LIVES OF EMINENT MEN, is much exaggerated and overdrawn.

It has not hitherto been remarked, that among the Kentish gentry who, from time to time, elected to change the nature of their tenure from gavelkind to primogeniture, were the Lovelaces themselves, in the person of Thomas Lovelace,<2.26> who, by Act of Parliament 2 and 3 Edw. VI. obtained, concurrently with several other families, the power of conversion. This Thomas Lovelace was not improbably the same, who was admitted a student of Gray's Inn in 1541; and that he was of the Kentish Lovelaces there is not much reason to doubt; although, at the same time, I am unable to fix the precise degree of consanguinity between him and Serjeant William Lovelace of Gray's Inn, who died in 1576, and who was great-grandfather to the author of LUCASTA. The circumstance that the real property of Thomas Lovelace aforesaid, situated in Kent, was released by Act of Parliament, 2 and 3 Edw. VI. from the operations of gavelkind tenure (assuming, as is most likely to have been the case, that he was of the same stock as the poet, though not an immediate ancestor,) seems to explain the following allusion by Dudley Lovelace in the verses prefixed by him to LUCASTA, 1649:—

"Those by the landed have been writ,  
Mine's but a younger-brother wit."

As well as the subjoined lines by Lovelace in the poem entitled,  
"To Lucasta, from Prison," (see p. 44 of present edition):—

"Next would I court my LIBERTY,  
And then my birthright, PROPERTY."

There is evidence to prove that Lovelace was on intimate terms with some of the wits of his time, and that he had friendly relations with many of them—such as Hall, Rawlins, Lenton, and particularly the Cottons. John Tatham, the City Poet, and author of THE FANCIES THEATER, 1640, knew him well, and addressed to him some stanzas, not devoid of merit, during his stay abroad. In 1643, Henry Glapthorne, a celebrated dramatist and poet of the same age, dedicated to Lovelace his poem of WHITEHALL, printed in that year in a quarto pamphlet, with elegies on the Earls of Bedford and Manchester.<2.27> The pages of LUCASTA bear testimony to the acquaintance of the author with Anthony Hodges of New College, Oxford, translator of CLITOPHON AND LEUCIPPE from the Greek of Achilles Tatius (or rather probably from a Latin version of the original), and with other<2.28> members of the University.<2.29>

Although it is stated by Wood that LUCASTA was prepared for the press by Lovelace himself, on his return from the Continent in 1648, it is impossible to believe that any care was bestowed on the correction of the text, or on the arrangement of the various pieces which compose the volume: nor did his brother Dudley Posthumus, who edited the second part of the book in 1659, perform his task in any degree better. In both instances, the printer seems to have been suffered to do the work in his own way, and very infamously he has done it. To supply all the short-comings of the author and his literary executor at this distance of time, is, unfortunately, out of the power of any editor; but in the present republication I have taken the liberty of rearranging the poems, to a certain extent in the order in which it may be conjectured that they were written; and where Lovelace contributed commendatory verses to other works, either before or after the appearance of the first portion of LUCASTA, the two texts have been collated, and improved readings been occasionally obtained.

The few poems, on which the fame of Lovelace may be said to rest, are emanations not only of the



stirring period in which he lived, but of the peculiar circumstances into which he was thrown at different epochs of his life. Lovelace had not the melodious and exquisite taste of Herrick, the wit of Suckling, or the power of Randolph (so often second only to his master Jonson). Mr. Singer has praised the exuberant fancy of Lovelace; but, in my thinking, Lovelace was inferior in fancy, as well as in grace, both to Carew and the author of HESPERIDES. Yet Lovelace has left behind him one or two things, which I doubt if any of those writers could have produced, and which our greatest poets would not have been ashamed to own. Winstanley was so far right in instituting a comparison between Lovelace and Sydney, that it is hard to name any one in the entire circle of early English literature except Sydney and Wither, who could have attempted, with any chance of success, the SONG TO ALTHEA FROM PRISON; and how differently Sydney at least would have handled it! We know what Herrick would have made of it; it would have furnished the theme for one more invocation to Julia. From Suckling we should have had a bantering playfulness, or a fescennine gaiety, equally unsuited to the subject. Waller had once an opportunity of realizing the position, which has been described by his contemporary in immortal stanzas; but Waller, when he was under confinement, was thinking too much of his neck to write verses with much felicity, and preferred waiting, till he got back to Beaconsfield (when his inspiration had evaporated), to pour out his feelings to Lady Dorothy or Lady Sophia. Wither's song, "Shall I wasting in Despair," is certainly superior to the SONG TO ALTHEA. Wither was frequently equal to Lovelace in poetical imagery and sentiment, and he far excelled him in versification. The versification of Lovelace is indeed more rugged and unmusical than that of any other writer of the period, and this blemish is so conspicuous throughout LUCASTA, and is noticeable in so many cases, where it might have been avoided with very little trouble, that we are naturally led to the inference that Lovelace, in writing, accepted from indolence or haste, the first word which happened to occur to his mind. Daniel, Drayton, and others were, it is well known, indefatigable revisers of their poems; they "added and altered many times," mostly for the better, occasionally for the worse. We can scarcely picture to ourselves Lovelace blotting a line, though it would have been well for his reputation, if he had blotted many.

In the poem of the LOOSE SARABAND (p. 34) there is some resemblance to a piece translated from Meleager in Elton's SPECIMENS OF CLASSIC POETS, i. 411, and entitled by Elton "Playing at Hearts."

"Love acts the tennis-player's part,  
And throws to thee my panting heart;  
Heliadora! ere it fall,  
Let desire catch swift the ball:  
Let her in the ball-court move,  
Follow in the game with love.  
If thou throw me back again,  
I shall of foul play complain."

And an address to the Cicada by the same writer, (IBID. i. 415) opens with these lines:—

"Oh, shrill-voiced insect that, with dew-drops sweet  
Inebriate, dost in desert woodlands sing."

In the poem called "The Grasshopper" (p. 94), the author speaks of the insect as

"Drunk ev'ry night with a delicious tear,  
Dropped thee from heaven."—

The similarity, in each case, I believe to have been entirely accidental: nor am I disposed to think that Lovelace was under any considerable or direct obligations to the classics. I have taken occasion to remark that Lovelace seems to have helped to furnish a model to Cleveland, who carried to an extraordinary length that fondness for words and figures derived from the alchymist's vocabulary; but as regards the author of LUCASTA himself, it may be asserted that there are few writers whose productions exhibit less of book-lore than his, and even in those places, where he has employed phrases or images similar to some found in Peele, Middleton, Herrick, and others, there is great room to question, whether the circumstance can be treated as amounting to more than a curious coincidence.

The Master of Dulwich College has obligingly informed me, that the picture of ALTHEA, as well as that of Lovelace himself, bequeathed by Cartwright the actor to Dulwich College in 1687, bears no clue to date of composition, or to the artist's name, and that it does not assist in the identification of the lady. This is the more vexatious, inasmuch as it seems probable that ALTHEA, whoever she was, became the poet's wife, after LUCASTA'S marriage to another. The CHLOES, &c. mentioned in the following pages were merely more or less intimate acquaintances of Lovelace, like the ELECTRA, PERILLA, CORINNA, &c. of Herrick. But at the same time an obscurity has hitherto hung over some of the persons mentioned under fictitious names in the poems of Lovelace, which a little research and trouble would have easily removed. For instance, no one who reads "Amarantha, a Pastoral," doubts that LUCASTA and AMARANTHA are one and the same person. ALEXIS is Lovelace himself. ELLINDA

is a female friend of the poet, who occasionally stayed at her house, and on one occasion (p. 79) had a serious illness there. ELLINDA marries AMYNTOR, under which disguise, I suspect, lurks the well known Maecenas of his time, Endymion Porter. If Porter be AMYNTOR, of course ELLINDA must be the Lady Olivia Porter, his wife. ARIGO (see the poem of AMYNTOR'S GROVE) signifies Porter's friend, Henry Jermyn. It may be as well to add that the LETTICE mentioned at p. 121, was the Lady Lettice Goring, wife of Lovelace's friend, and third daughter of Richard Boyle, first Earl of Cork. This lady died before her husband, to whom she brought no issue.

The following lines are prefixed to FONS LACHRYMARUM, &c. by John Quarles, 1648, 8vo., and are subscribed, as will be seen, R. L.; they may be from the pen of Lovelace; but, if so, it is strange that they were not admitted, with other productions of a similar character, into the volume published by the poet himself in 1649, or into that edited by his brother in 1659.

**TO MY DEAR FRIEND THE AUTHOR.**

The Son begins to rise, the Father's set:  
 Heav'n took away one light, and pleas'd to let  
 Another rise. Quarles, thy light's divine,  
 And it shall teach Darkness it self to shine.  
 Each word revives thy Father's name, his art  
 Is well imprinted in thy noble heart.  
 I've read thy pleasing lines, wherein I find  
 The rare Endeavors of a modest mind.  
 Proceed as well as thou hast well begun,  
 That we may see the Father by the Son.

R. L.

Arms of Lovelace of Bethersden: Gules, on a chief indented argent, three martlets sable.

<2.1> Pedigree of the family of Richard Lovelace, the poet.

Richard Lovelace, of Queenhithe (temp. Hen. VI.).

!

Lancelot Lovelace.

!

-----  
 !!!

Richard Lovelace, William Lovelace John (ancestor of the  
 d. s. p. (ob. 1501). Lords Lovelace, of

! Hurley (co. Berks).

!

-----  
 !!

John William Lovelace.

!

William Lovelace, Serjeant at Law, ob. 1576.

!

-----  
 !

Sir William Lovelace, ob. 1629===Elizabeth, daughter of  
 (according to Berry). ! Edward Aucher, Esq., of

! Bishopsbourne.

!

-----  
 !

Sir William Lovelace===Anne, daughter and heir of

! Sir William Barnes, of Woolwich.

!

-----  
 !!!!!

Richard===? Althea. ! William. ! Dudley.===Mary Johanna===Robert  
 Lovelace,! ! ! Lovelace, ! Caesar

born ! Francis. Thomas. ! (? his ! Esq.

1618 ! ! cousin). !

!!!

! A daughter, !

! b. 1678. !

!!

Margaret===Henry Coke, Esq. 5th -----

! son of the Chief !!!

! Justice, and ancestor Anne. Juliana. Johanna.

! of the Earls of Leicester.

!

-----  
!!!!

Richard. Ciriac. . . . .

The above has been partly derived from a communication to the GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE for Dec. 1791, by Sir Egerton Brydges, who chiefly compiled it from Hasted, compared with Berry's KENT GENEALOGIES, 474, where there are a few inaccuracies. It is, of course, a mere skeleton-tree, and furnishes no information as to the collateral branches, the connexion between the houses of Stanley and Lovelace, &c. Sir Egerton Brydges' series of articles on Lovelace in the GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE, with the exception of that from which the foregoing table is taken, does not contain much, if anything, that is new. On the 3rd of May, 1577, Henry Binneman paid "vi<pence> and a copie" to the Stationers' Company for the right to print "the Briefe Course of the Accidents of the Deathe of Mr. Serjeant Lovelace;" and on the 30th of August following, Richard Jones obtained a licence to print "A Short Epitaphe of Serjeant Lovelace." This was the same person who is described in the pedigree as dying in 1576. His death happened, no doubt, like that of Sir Robert Bell and others, at the Oxford Summer assizes for 1576. See Stow's ANNALES, fol. 1154.

In 1563, Barnaby Googe the poet dedicated his EGLOGS, EPITAPHES, AND SONNETTES, NEWLY WRITTEN, to "the Ryght Worshypfull M. Richard Lovelace, Esquier, Reader of Grayes Inne."

The following is a list of the members of the Lovelace family who belonged to the Honourable Society of Gray's Inn from 1541 to 1646:—

Thomas Lovelace, admitted 1541.

William Lovelace, " 1548. Called to the bar in 1551.

Richard Lovelace, " 1557. Reader in 1563. Barnaby Googe's friend.

Lancelot Lovelace, " 1571.

William Lovelace, " 1580.

Lancelot Lovelace, " 1581. Recorder of Canterbury, ob. 1640, aet. 78.

Francis Lovelace, " 1609. Perhaps the same who was Recorder of Canterbury in 1638.

Francis Lovelace " 1640. Probably the poet's younger (of Canterbury), brother.

William Lovelace, " 1646.

For these names and dates I am indebted to the courtesy of the Steward of Gray's Inn.

Sir William Lovelace, the poet's grandfather who, according to Berry, died in 1629, was a correspondent of Sir Dudley Carleton (see CALENDARS OF STATE PAPERS, DOMESTIC SERIES, 1611-18, pp. 443, 521, 533; Ibid. 1618-23, p. 17). It appears from some Latin lines before the first portion of LUCASTA, that the poet's father served with distinction in Holland, and probably it was this circumstance which led to Lovelace himself turning his attention in a similar direction: for the latter was on service in the Low Countries, perhaps under his father (of whose death we do not know the date, though Hasted intimates that he fell at the Gryll), when his friend Tatham, afterwards the city poet, addressed to him some verses printed in a volume entitled OSTELLA (printed in 1650).

<2.2> Mr. A. Keightley, Registrar of the Charterhouse, with his usual kindness, examined for me the books of the institution, in the hope of finding the date of Lovelace's admission, &c., but without success. Mr. Keightley has suggested to me that perhaps Lovelace was not on the foundation, which is of course highly probable, and which, as Mr. Keightley seems to think, may account for the omission of his name from the registers.

<2.3> "He was matriculated at Gloucester Hall, June 27, 1634, as "filius Gul. Lovelace de Woolwich in Com. Kant. arm. au. nat. 16."—Dr. Bliss, in a note on this passage in his edition of the ATHENAE.

<2.4> Bethersden is a parish in the Weald of Kent, eastward of Smarden, near Surrenden. "The manor of Lovelace," says Hasted (HISTORY OF KENT, iii. 239), "is situated at a very small distance

SOUTH-WESTWARD from the church [of Bethersden]. It was in early times the property of a family named Grunsted, or Greenstreet, as they were sometimes called; the last of whom, HENRY DE GRUNSTED, a man of eminent repute, as all the records of this county testify, in the reigns of both King Edward II. and III., passed away this manor to KINET, in which name it did not remain long; for WILLIAM KINET, in the 41st year of King Edward III., conveyed it by sale to JOHN LOVELACE, who erected that mansion here, which from hence bore his name in addition, being afterwards styled BETHERSDEN-LOVELACE, from which sprang a race of gentlemen, who, in the military line, acquired great reputation and honour, and by their knowledge in the municipal laws, deserved well of the Commonwealth; from whom descended those of this name seated at BAYFORD in SITTINGBORNE, and at KINGSDOWN in this county, the Lords Lovelace of Hurley, and others of the county of Berks." The same writer, in his HISTORY OF CANTERBURY, has preserved many memorials of the connexion of the Lovelaces from the earliest times with Canterbury and its neighbourhood. William Lovelace, in the reign of Philip and Mary, died possessed of the mansion belonging to the abbey of St. Lawrence, near Canterbury; after the death of his son William, it passed to other hands. In 1621, Lancelot Lovelace, Esq., was Recorder of Canterbury; in 1638, Richard Lovelace, Esq., held that office; and in the year of the Restoration, Richard Lovelace, the poet's brother, was Recorder. In the Public Library at Plymouth, there is a folio MS. (mentioned in Mr. Halliwell's catalogue, 1853), containing "Original Papers of the Molineux and LOVELACE Families." I regret that I have not had an opportunity of inspecting it. Mr. Halliwell does not seem to have examined the volume; at all events, that gentleman does not furnish any particulars as to the nature of the contents, or as to the period to which the papers belong. This information, in the case of a MS. deposited in a provincial library in a remote district, would have been peculiarly valuable. It is possible that the documents refer only to the Lovelaces of Hurley, co. Berks.

<2.5> "The Humble Petition of the Gentry, Ministers, and Commonalty, for the county of Kent, agreed upon at the General Assizes for that county." See JOURNALS OF THE HOUSE OF LORDS, iv. 675-6-7. The "framers and contrivers" of this petition were Sir Edward Dering, Bart., of Surrenden-Dering; Sir Roger Twysden, the well-known scholar; Sir George Strode, and Mr. Richard Spencer. On the 21st May, 1641, Dering had unsuccessfully attempted to bring in a bill for the ABOLITION of church government by bishops, archbishops, &c., whereas one of the articles of the petition of 1642 (usually known as DERING'S PETITION) was a prayer for the restoration of the Liturgy and the maintenance of the episcopal bench in its integrity. A numerous signed petition had also been addressed to both Houses by the county in 1641, in which the strongest reasons were given for the adoption of Dering's proposed act. From 1641 to 1648, indeed, the Houses were overwhelmed by Kentish petitions of various kinds. This portion of Wood's narrative is confirmed by Marvell's lines prefixed to LUCASTA, 1649:—

"And one the Book prohibits, because Kent  
Their first Petition by the Authour sent."

"Sir William Boteler, of Kent, returning about the beginning of APRIL 1642, from his attendance (being then Gentleman Pentioner) on the king at YORKE, then celebrating St. GEORGE'S feast, was by the earnest solicitation of the Gentry of Kent engaged to joyn with them in presenting the most honest and famous Petition of theirs to the House of Commons, delivered by Captain RICHARD LOVELACE, for which service the Captain was committed Prisoner to the GATE HOUSE, and SIR WILLIAM BOTELER to the Fleet, from whence, after some weeks close imprisonment, no impeachment in all that time brought in against him [Boteler], many Petitions being delivered and read in the House for his enlargement, he was at last upon bail of <pounds>20,000 [<pounds>15,000] remitted to his house in LONDON, to attend DE DIE IN DIEM the pleasure of the House."—MERCURIUS RUSTICUS, 1646 (edit. 1685, pp. 7, 8). The fact was that, although on the 7th of April, 1642, the Kentish petition in favour of the Liturgy, &c. had been ordered by the House of Commons to be burned by the common hangman (PARLIAMENTS AND COUNCILS OF ENGLAND, 1839, p. 384), Boteler and Lovelace had the temerity, on the 30th of the same month, to come up to London, and present it again to the House. It was this which occasioned their committal. In the VERNEY PAPERS (Camd. Soc. 1845, p. 175) there is the following memorandum:—

"Captaine Lovelace committed to the Gatehouse ! Concerning  
Sir William Butler committed to the Fleete ! Deering's  
! petition."

<2.6> "Gatehouse, a prison in Westminster, near the west end of the Abbey, which leads into Dean's Yard, Tothill Street, and the Almonry"—Cunningham's HANDBOOK OF LONDON, PAST AND PRESENT. But for a more particular account, see Stow's SURVEY, ed. 1720, ii. lib. 6.

"The Gatehouse for a Prison was ordain'd,  
When in this land the third king EDWARD reign'd:  
Good lodging roomes, and diet it affords,

But I had rather lye at home on boords."

Taylor's PRAISE AND VIRTUE OF A JAYLE AND JAYLERS,  
(Works, 1630, ii. 130).

<2.7> By an inadvertence, I have spoken of THOMAS, instead of WILLIAM, Lovelace having perished at Caermarthen, in a note at p. 125. <i.e. note 52.1>

<2.8> It appears from the following copy of verses, printed in Tatham's OSTELLA, 1650, 4to., that Lovelace made a stay in the Netherlands about this time, if indeed he did not serve there with his regiment.

**UPON MY NOBLE FRIEND RICHARD LOVELACE, ESQ., HIS BEING IN HOLLAND. AN INVITATION.**

Come, Adonis, come again;  
What distaste could drive thee hence,  
Where so much delight did reign,  
Sateing ev'n the soul of sense?  
And though thou unkind hast prov'd,  
Never youth was more belov'd.  
Then, lov'd Adonis, come away,  
For Venus brooks not thy delay.

Wert thou sated with the spoil  
Of so many virgin hearts,  
And therefore didst change thy soil,  
To seek fresh in other parts?  
Dangers wait on foreign game;  
We have deer more sound and tame.  
Then, lov'd Adonis, come away,  
For Venus brooks not thy delay.

Phillis, fed with thy delights,  
In thy absence pines away;  
And love, too, hath lost his rites,  
Not one lass keeps holiday.  
They have changed their mirth for cares,  
And do onely sigh thy airs.  
Then, lov'd Adonis, come away,  
For Venus brooks not thy delay.

Elpine, in whose sager looks  
Thou wert wont to take delight,  
Hath forsook his drink and books,  
'Cause he can't enjoy thy sight:  
He hath laid his learning by,  
'Cause his wit wants company.  
Then, lov'd Adonis, come away,  
For friendship brooks not thy delay.

All the swains that once did use  
To converse with Love and thee,  
In the language of thy Muse,  
Have forgot Love's deity:  
They deny to write a line,  
And do only talk of thine.  
Then, lov'd Adonis, come away,  
For friendship brooks not thy delay.

By thy sweet Althea's voice,  
We conjure thee to return;  
Or we'll rob thee of that choice,  
In whose flames each heart would burn:  
That inspir'd by her and sack,  
Such company we will not lack:  
That poets in the age to come,  
Shall write of our Elisium.

<2.9> Peter, or rather PETRE House, in Aldersgate Street, belonged at one time to the antient family by whose name it was known. The third Lord Petre, dying in 1638, left it, with other possessions in and about the city of London, to his son William. (Collins's PEERAGE, by Brydges, vii. 10, 11.) When Lovelace was committed to Peter House, and probably long before (MERCURIUS RUSTICUS, ed. 1685, pp. 76-79), this mansion was used as a house of detention for political prisoners; but in Ward's DIARY (ed. Severn, p. 167), there is the following entry (like almost all Ward's entries, unluckily without date):—"My Lord Peters is an Essex man; hee hath a house in Aldersgate Street, wherein lives the Marquis of Dorchester:" implying that at that period (perhaps about 1660), the premises still belonged to the Petre family, though temporarily let to Lord Dorchester. Another celebrated house in the same street was London House, which continued for some time to be the town residence of the Bishops of London. When it had ceased to be an episcopal abode, it was adapted to the purposes of an ordinary dwelling, and, among the occupants, at a somewhat later period, was Tom Rawlinson, the great book-collector. See Stow, ed. 1720, ii. lib. iii. p. 121.

<2.10> How different was the conduct, under similar circumstances, of the lady whom Charles Gerbier commemorates in his ELOGIUM HEROINUM, 1651, p. 127. "Democion, the Athenian virgin," he tells us, "hearing that Leosthenes, to whom she was contracted, was slain in the wars, she killed herself; but before her death she thus reasoned with herself: 'Although my body is untoucht, yet should I fall into the imbraces of another, I should but deceive the second, since I am still married to the former in my heart.'"

<2.11> Wood's story about LUCASTA having been a Lucy Sacheverell, "a lady of great beauty and fortune," may reasonably be doubted. Lucasta, whoever she was, seems to have belonged to Kent; the SACHEVERELLS were not a Kentish family. Besides, the corruption of Lucy Sacheverell into Lucasta is not very obvious, and rather violent; and the probability is that the author of the ATHENAE was misled by his informant on this occasion. The plate etched by Lely and engraved by Faithorne, which is found in the second part of LUCASTA, 1659, can scarcely be regarded as a portrait; it was, in all likelihood, a mere fancy sketch, and we are not perhaps far from the truth in our surmise that the artist was nearly, if not quite, as much in the dark as to who Lucasta was, as we are ourselves at the present day.

<2.12> This is a mistake on the part of Wood, which (with many others) ought to be corrected in a new edition of the ATHENAE. Lawes did not set to music AMARANTHA, A PASTORAL, nor any portion of it; but he harmonized two stanzas of a little poem to be found at p. 29 of the present volume, and called "To Amarantha; that she would dishevel her Hair."

<2.13> Hasted states that soon after the death of Charles I. the manor of Lovelace-Bethersden passed by purchase to Richard Hulse, Esq.

<2.14> On the title-page of this portion of LUCASTA, as well as on that which had appeared in 1649, the author is expressly styled RICHARD LOVELACE, ESQ.: yet in Berry's KENT GENEALOGIES, p. 474, he is, curiously enough, called SIR Richard Lovelace, KNT. It is scarcely necessary to observe that the error is on Berry's side.

<2.15> The most pleasing likeness of Lovelace, the only one, indeed, which conveys any just idea to us of the "handsomest man of his time," is the picture at Dulwich, which has been twice copied, in both instances with very indifferent success. One of these copies was made for Harding's BIOGRAPHICAL MIRROR. Bromley (DICTIONARY OF ENGRAVED BRITISH PORTRAITS, 1793, p. 101) correctly names F[rancis] Lovelace, the writer's brother, as the designer of the portrait before the POSTHUME POEMS.

<2.16> Winstanley, perhaps, intended some allusion to these two lost dramas from the pen of Lovelace, when he thus characterizes him in his LIVES OF THE POETS, 1687, p. 170:—"I can compare no man," he says, "so like this Colonel LOVELACE as SIR PHILIP SIDNEY, of which latter it is said by one in an epitaph made of him:—

'Nor is it fit that more I should acquaint,  
Lest men adore in one  
A Scholar, SOULDIER, Lover, and a Saint.'"

As to the comparison, Winstanley must be understood to signify a resemblance between Lovelace and Sydney as men, rather than as writers. Winstanley's extract is from WITS' RECREATIONS, but the text, as he gives it, varies from that printed by the editor of the reprint of that work in 1817.

<2.17> Gunpowder Alley still exists, but it is not the Gunpowder Alley which Lovelace knew, having been rebuilt more than once since 1658, It is now a tolerably wide and airy court, without any conspicuous appearance of squalor. There is no tradition, I am sorry to say, respecting Lovelace; all such recollections have long been swept away. When one of the old inhabitants told me (and there are one or two persons who have lived here all their life) that a great poet once resided thereabout, I

naturally became eager to catch the name; but it turned out to be Dr. Johnson, not Lovelace, the latter of whom might have been contemporary with Homer for aught they knew to the contrary in Gunpowder Alley. It appears from Decker and Webster's play of WESTWARD HOE, 1607 (Webster's Works, ed. Hazlitt, i. 67), that there was another Gunpowder Alley, near Crutched Friars.

<2.18> Hone (EVERY-DAY BOOK, ii. 561, edit. 1827), states, under date of April 28, that "during this month in 1658 the accomplished Colonel Richard Lovelace died IN THE GATEHOUSE AT WESTMINSTER, whither he had been committed," &c. No authority, however, is given for an assertion so wholly at variance with the received view on the subject, and I am afraid that Hone has here fallen into a mistake.

<2.19> Aubrey, in what are called his LIVES OF EMINENT MEN, but which are, in fact, merely rough biographical memoranda, states under the head of Lovelace:—"Obiit in a cellar in Long acre, a little before the restauration of his Matie. Mr. Edm. Wyld, &c. had made collections for him, and given him money.....Geo. Petty, haberdasher, in Fleet street, carried xx<shillings> to him every Monday morning from Sr....Many and Charles Cotton, Esq. for....moneths, BUT WAS NEVER REPAYD." Aubrey was certainly a contemporary of Lovelace, and Wood seems to have been indebted to him for a good deal of information; but all who are acquainted with Aubrey are probably aware that he took, in many instances, very little trouble to examine for himself, but accepted statements on hearsay. Wood does not, in the case of Lovelace, adopt Aubrey's account, and it is to be observed that, IF the poet died as poor as he is represented by both writers to have died, he would have been buried by the parish, and, dying in Long Acre, the parochial authorities would not have carried him to Fleet Street for sepulture.

<<AN.1>> P. xxiv. MR. EDM[UND] WYLD. This gentleman, the friend of Aubrey, Author of the MISCELLANIES, &c., and (?) the son of Sir Edmund Wyld, seems to have furnished the former with a variety of information on matters of current interest. See Thoms' ANECDOTES AND TRADITIONS, 1839, p. 99. He is, no doubt, the E. W. Esq., whom Aubrey cites as his authority on one or two occasions, in his REMAINS OF GENTILISM AND JUDAISM. He was evidently a person of the most benevolent character, and Aubrey (LIVES OF EMINENT MEN, ii. 483) pays him a handsome tribute, where he describes him as "a great fautor of ingenious and good men, for meer merit's sake."

<2.20> See p. 149, NOTE 3.<i.e. note 63.4> His acquaintance with Hellenic literature possibly extended very little beyond the pages of the ANTHOLOGIA.

<2.21> His favourites appear to have been Ausonius and Catullus.

<2.22> On the 5th May, 1642, a counter-petition was presented by some Kentish gentlemen to the House of Commons, disclaiming and condemning the former one.—JOURNALS OF THE H. OF C. ii. 558.

<2.23> "The humble petition of Richard Lovelace, Esquire, a prisoner in the Gate-house, by a former order of this House."—JOURNALS, ii. 629.

<2.24> This property, which was of considerable extent and value, was purchased of the Cheney family, toward the latter part of the reign of Henry VI, by Richard Lovelace, of Queenhithe.

<2.25> I do not think that there is any proof, that Gunpowder-alley was, at the time when Lovelace resided there, a particularly poor or mean locality.

<2.26> See Lambarde (PERAMBULATION OF KENT, 1570, ed. 1826, p. 533).

<2.27> As so little is known of the personal history of Lovelace, the reader may not be displeased to see this Dedication, and it is therefore subjoined:—

"To my Noble Friend And Gossip, CAPTAIN RICHARD LOVELACE.

"Sir,

"I have so long beene in your debt that I am almost desperate in my selfe of making you paiment, till this fancy by ravishing from you a new curtesie in its patronage, promised me it would satisfie part of my former engagements to you. Wonder not to see it invade you thus on the sudden; gratitude is aeriall, and, like that element, nimble in its motion and performance; though I would not have this of mine of a French disposition, to charge hotly and retreat unfortunately: there may appeare something in this that may maintaine the field courageously against Envy, nay come off with honour; if you, Sir, please to rest satisfied that it marches under your

ensignes, which are the desires of  
"Your true honourer,  
"Hen. Glapthorne."

<2.28> It has never, so far as I am aware, been suggested that the friend to whom Sir John Suckling addressed his capital ballad:—

"I tell thee, Dick, where I have been,"

may have been Lovelace. It was a very usual practice (then even more so than now) among familiar acquaintances to use the abbreviated Christian name in addressing each other; thus Suckling was JACK; Davenant, WILL; Carew, TOM, &c.; in the preceding generation Marlowe had been KIT; Jonson, BEN; Greene, ROBIN, and so forth; and although there is no positive proof that Lovelace and Suckling were intimate, it is extremely probable that such was the case, more especially as they were not only brother poets, but both country gentlemen belonging to neighbouring counties. Suckling had, besides, some taste and aptitude for military affairs, and could discourse about strategics in a city tavern over a bowl of canary with the author of LUCASTA, notwithstanding that he was a little troubled by nervousness (according to report), when the enemy was too near.

<2.29> From Andrew Marvell's lines prefixed to LUCASTA, 1649, it seems that Lovelace and himself were on tolerably good terms, and that when the former presented the Kentish petition, and was imprisoned for so doing, his friends, who exerted themselves to procure his release, suspected Marvell of a share in his disgrace, which Marvell, according to his own account, earnestly disclaimed. See the lines commencing:—

"But when the beauteous ladies came to know," &c.

## ADDITIONAL NOTES.

<This is the original location of notes AN.1, AN.2, AN.3, AN.4, and AN.5. These notes have been moved to appropriate locations in the text.>

## LUCASTA:

Epodes, Odes, Sonnets,  
Songs, &c.

### TO WHICH IS ADDED

Aramantha,  
a  
PASTORALL.

BY  
RICHARD LOVELACE,  
Esq.

LONDON,  
Printed by Tho. Harper, and are to be sold  
by Tho. Euvster, at the Gun, in  
Ivie Lane. 1649.

## THE DEDICATION.

TO THE RIGHT HON. MY LADY ANNE LOVELACE.<3.1>

To the richest Treasury  
That e'er fill'd ambitious eye;  
To the faire bright Magazin  
Hath impoverisht Love's Queen;  
To th' Exchequer of all honour  
(All take pensions but from her);



To the taper of the thore  
 Which the god himselfe but bore;  
 To the Sea of Chaste Delight;  
 Let me cast the Drop I write.  
 And as at Loretto's shrine  
 Caesar shovels in his mine,  
 Th' Empres spreads her carkanets,  
 The lords submit their coronets,  
 Knights their chased armes hang by,  
 Maids diamond-ruby fancies tye;  
 Whilst from the pilgrim she wears  
 One poore false pearl, but ten true tears:  
 So among the Orient prize,  
 (Saphyr-onyx eulogies)  
 Offer'd up unto your fame,  
 Take my GARNET-DUBLET name,  
 And vouchsafe 'midst those rich joyes  
 (With devotion) these TOYES.  
 Richard Lovelace.

<3.1> This lady was the wife of the unfortunate John, second Lord Lovelace, who suffered so severely for his attachment to the King's cause, and daughter to the equally unfortunate Thomas, Earl of Cleveland, who was equally devoted to his sovereign, and whose estates were ordered by the Parliament to be sold, July 26, 1650. See PARLIAMENTS AND COUNCILS OF ENGLAND, 1839, p. 507.

## VERSES ADDRESSED TO THE AUTHOR.

### TO MY BEST BROTHER ON HIS POEMS CALLED "LUCASTA."

Now y' have oblieg'd the age, thy wel known worth  
 Is to our joy auspiciously brought forth.  
 Good morrow to thy son, thy first borne flame  
 Which, as thou gav'st it birth, stamps it a name,  
 That Fate and a discerning age shall set  
 The chiefest jewell in her coronet.

Why then needs all this paines, those season'd pens,  
 That standing lifeguard to a booke (kinde friends),  
 That with officious care thus guard thy gate,  
 As if thy Child were illegitimate?  
 Forgive their freedome, since unto their praise  
 They write to give, not to dispute thy bayes.

As when some glorious queen, whose pregnant wombe  
 Brings forth a kingdome with her first-borne Sonne,  
 Marke but the subjects joyfull hearts and eyes:  
 Some offer gold, and others sacrifice;  
 This slayes a lambe, that, not so rich as hee,  
 Brings but a dove, this but a bended knee;  
 And though their giftes be various, yet their sence  
 Speaks only this one thought, Long live the prince.

So, my best brother, if unto your name  
 I offer up a thin blew-burning flame,  
 Pardon my love, since none can make thee shine,  
 Vnlesse they kindle first their torch at thine.  
 Then as inspir'd, they boldly write, nay that,  
 Which their amazed lights but twinkl'd at,  
 And their illustrate thoughts doe voice this right,  
 Lucasta held their torch; thou gav'st it light.

Francis Lovelace, Col.

## AD EUNDEM.

En puer Idalius tremulis circumvolat alis,  
Quem prope sedentem<4.1> castior<4.2> uret amor.  
Lampada sic videas circumvolitare Pyrausta,<4.3>  
Cui contingenti est flamma futura rogas.  
Ergo procul fugias, Lector, cui nulla placebunt  
Carmina, ni fuerint turpia, spurca, nigra.  
Sacrificus Romae lustralem venditat undam:  
Castior est illa Castalis unda mihi:  
Limpida, et <<eulikrines>>, nulla putredine spissa,  
Scilicet ex puro defluit illa jugo.  
Ex pura veniunt tam dia poemata mente,  
Cui scelus est Veneris vel tetigisse fores.  
Thomas Hamersley, Eques Auratus.

<4.1> Old ed. SIDENTEM.

<4.2> Old ed. CARTIOR.

<4.3> See Scheller's LEX. TOT. LAT. voce PYRAUSTA and PYRALIS

## ON THE POEMS.

How humble is thy muse (Deare) that can daign  
Such servants as my pen to entertaine!  
When all the sonnes of wit glory to be  
Clad in thy muses gallant livery.  
I shall disgrace my master, prove a staine,  
And no addition to his honour'd traine;  
Though all that read me will presume to swear  
I neer read thee: yet if it may appear,  
I love the writer and admire the writ,  
I my owne want betray, not wrong thy wit.  
Did thy worke want a prayse, my barren brain  
Could not afford it: my attempt were vaine.  
It needs no foyle: All that ere writ before,  
Are foyles to thy faire Poems, and no more.  
Then to be lodg'd in the same sheets with thine,  
May prove disgrace to yours, but grace to mine.  
Norris Jephson, Col.

TO MY MUCH LOVED FRIEND, RICHARD LOVELACE Esq.

## CARMEN EROTICUM.

Deare Lovelace, I am now about to prove  
I cannot write a verse, but can write love.  
On such a subject as thy booke I coo'd  
Write books much greater, but not half so good.  
But as the humble tenant, that does bring  
A chicke or egges for's offering,  
Is tane into the buttry, and does fox<5.1>  
Equall with him that gave a stalled oxe:  
So (since the heart of ev'ry cheerfull giver  
Makes pounds no more accepted than a stiver),<5.2>  
Though som thy prayse in rich stiles sing, I may  
In stiver-stile write love as well as they.  
I write so well that I no criticks feare;  
For who'le read mine, when as thy booke's so neer,  
Vnlesse thy selfe? then you shall secure mine  
From those, and Ile engage my selfe for thine.  
They'l do't themselves; <thee> this allay you'l take,

I love thy book, and yet not for thy sake.  
John Jephson, Col.<5.3>

<5.1> TO FOX usually means to intoxicate. To fox oneself is TO GET DRUNK, and to fox a person is TO MAKE HIM DRUNK. The word in this sense belongs to the cant vocabulary. But in the present case, fox merely signifies TO FARE or TO FEAST.

<5.2> A Dutch penny. It is very likely that this individual had served with the poet in Holland.

<5.3> Three members of this family, or at least three persons of this name, probably related, figure in the history of the present period, viz., Colonel John Jephson, apparently a military associate of Lovelace; Norris Jephson, who contributed a copy of verses to LUCASTA, and to the first folio edition of Beaumont and Fletcher's plays, 1647; and William Jephson, whose name occurs among the subscribers to the SOLEMN LEAGUE AND COVENANT, 1643.

## TO MY NOBLE AND MOST INGENIOUS FRIEND, COLONEL RICHARD LOVELACE, UPON HIS "LUCASTA."

So from the pregnant braine of Jove did rise  
Pallas, the queene of wit and beautiful eyes,  
As faire Lucasta from thy temples flowes,  
Temples no lesse ingenious then Joves.  
Alike in birth, so shall she be in fame,  
And be immortall to preserve thy Name.

## ANOTHER, UPON THE POEMS.

Now, when the wars augment our woes and fears,  
And the shrill noise of drums oppresse our ears;  
Now peace and safety from our shores are fled  
To holes and cavernes to secure their head;  
Now all the graces from the land are sent,  
And the nine Muses suffer banishment;  
Whence spring these raptures? whence this heavenly rime,  
So calme and even in so harsh a time?  
Well might that charmer his faire Caelia<6.1> crowne,  
And that more polish't Tyterus<6.2> renowne  
His Sacarissa, when in groves and bowres  
They could repose their limbs on beds of flowrs:  
When wit had prayse, and merit had reward,  
And every noble spirit did accord  
To love the Muses, and their priests to raise,  
And interpale their browes with flourishing bayes;  
But in a time distracted so to sing,  
When peace is hurried hence on rages wing,  
When the fresh bayes are<6.3> from the Temple torne,  
And every art and science made a scorne;  
Then to raise up, by musicke of thy art,  
Our drooping spirits and our grieved hearts;  
Then to delight our souls, and to inspire  
Our breast with pleasure from thy charming lyre;  
Then to divert our sorrowes by thy straines,  
Making us quite forget our seven yeers paines  
In the past wars, unlesse that Orpheus be  
A sharer in thy glory: for when he  
Descended downe for his Euridice,  
He stroke his lute with like admired art,  
And made the damned to forget their smart.

John Pinchbacke, Col.<<AN.2>>

<6.1> Many poets have celebrated the charms of a CAELIA; but I apprehend that the writer here intends Carew.

<6.2> Waller.

<6.3> Original has IS.

<<AN.2>> P. 10. JOHN PINCHBACK, COL[ONEL]. Pinchback neither is nor was, I believe, a name of common occurrence; and it is just possible that the Colonel may be the very "old Jack Pinchbacke" mentioned by Sir Nicholas L'Estrange, in his MERRY PASSAGES AND JESTS, of which a selection was given by Mr. Thoms in his ANECDOTES AND TRADITIONS, 1839. L'Estrange, it is true, describes the Colonel as a "gamester and rufler, daubed with gold lace;" but this is not incompatible with the identity between the PINCHBACKE, who figures in LUCASTA, and OLD JACK, who had perhaps not always been "a gamester and ruffler," and whose gold lace had, no doubt, once been in better company than that which he seems to have frequented, when L'Estrange knew him. The "daubed gold lace," after all, only corresponds with the picture, which Lovelace himself may have presented in GUNPOWDER ALLEY days.

<<EXASTIKON.

Pseudetai hostis ephe-dolichos chronos oiden ameiben  
Ounoma, kai panton mnemosynen olesai.  
Oden gar poiein agathen ponos aphthonos esti,  
Hon medeis aion oiden odousi phagein.  
Oden soi, phile, doke men aphthiton, ogathe, mousa,  
Hos eis aionas ounoma ee teon.>>  
Villiers Harington, L.C.

#### TO HIS MUCH HONOURED FRIEND, MR. RICHARD LOVELACE, ON HIS POEMS.

He that doth paint the beauties of your verse,  
Must use your pensil, be polite, soft, terse;  
Forgive that man whose best of art is love,  
If he no equall master to you prove.  
My heart is all my eloquence, and that  
Speaks sharp affection, when my words fall flat;  
I reade you like my mistresse, and discry  
In every line the quicknesse of her eye:  
Her smoothnesse in each syllable, her grace  
To marshall ev'ry word in the right place.  
It is the excellence and soule of wit,  
When ev'ry thing is free as well as fit:  
For metaphors packt up and crowded close  
Swath <ye> minds sweetnes, and display the throws,  
And, like those chickens hatcht in furnaces,  
Produce or one limbe more, or one limbe lesse  
Then nature bids. Survey such when they write,  
No clause but's justl'd with an epithite.  
So powerfully you draw when you perswade,  
Passions in you in us are vertues made;  
Such is the magick of that lawfull shell  
That where it doth but talke, it doth compell:  
For no Apelles 'till this time e're drew  
A Venus to the waste so well as you.  
W. Rudyerd.<7.1>

<7.1> Only son of Sir Benjamin Rudyerd, Kt., known as a poet and a friend of poets, and as a warm advocate of Episcopacy. See MEMOIRS OF SIR B. R., edited by Manning, 1841, 8vo, p. 257.

The world shall now no longer mourne nor vex  
For th' obliquity of a cross-grain'd sex;  
Nor beauty swell above her bankes, (and made  
For ornament) the universe invade  
So fiercely, that 'tis question'd in our bookes,  
Whether kils most the Amazon's sword or lookes.

Lucasta in loves game discreetly makes  
 Women and men joyntly to share the stakes,  
 And lets us know, when women scorne, it is  
 Mens hot love makes the antiparisthesis;  
 And a lay lover here such comfort finds  
 As Holy Writ gives to affected minds.  
 The wilder nymphs, lov's power could not comand,  
 Are by thy almighty numbers brought to hand,  
 And flying Daphnes, caught, amazed vow  
 They never heard Apollo court till now.  
 'Tis not by force of armes this feat is done,  
 For that would puzzle even the Knight o' th' Sun;<8.1>  
 But 'tis by pow'r of art, and such a way  
 As Orpheus us'd, when he made fiends obay.  
 J. Needler, Hosp. Grayensis.

<8.1> A celebrated romance, very frequently referred to by our old writers. Sir Thomas Overbury, in his CHARACTERS, represents a chambermaid as carried away by the perusal of it into the realms of romance, insomuch that she can barely refrain from forsaking her occupation, and turning lady-errant. The book is better known under the title of THE MIRROR OF PRINCELY DEEDES AND KNIGHTHOOD, wherein is shewed the worthinesse of the Knight of the Sunne, &c. It consists of nine parts, which appear to have been published at intervals between 1585 and 1601.

## TO HIS NOBLE FRIEND, MR. RICHARD LOVELACE, UPON HIS POEMS.

SIR,

Ovr times are much degenerate from those,  
 Which your sweet Muse, which your fair fortune chose;  
 And as complexions alter with the climes,  
 Our wits have drawne th' infection of our times.  
 That candid age no other way could tell  
 To be ingenious, but by speaking well.  
 Who best could prayse, had then the greatest prayse;  
 'Twas more esteemd to give then wear the bayes.  
 Modest ambition studi'd only then  
 To honour not her selfe, but worthy men.  
 These vertues now are banisht out of towne,  
 Our Civill Wars have lost the civicke crowne.  
 He highest builds, who with most art destroys,  
 And against others fame his owne employs.  
 I see the envious caterpillar sit  
 On the faire blossome of each growing wit.  
 The ayre's already tainted with the swarms  
 Of insects, which against you rise in arms.  
 Word-peckers, paper-rats, book-scorpions,  
 Of wit corrupted the unfashion'd sons.  
 The barbed censurers begin to looke  
 Like the grim Consistory on thy booke;  
 And on each line cast a reforming eye  
 Severer then the yong presbytery.  
 Till, when in vaine they have thee all perus'd,  
 You shall for being faultlesse be accus'd.  
 Some reading your LUCASTA will alledge  
 You wrong'd in her the Houses priviledge;  
 Some that you under sequestration are,  
 Because you write when going to the Warre;  
 And one the book prohibits, because Kent  
 Their first Petition by the Authour sent.  
 But when the beauteous ladies came to know,  
 That their deare Lovelace was endanger'd so:  
 Lovelace, that thaw'd the most congealed brest,  
 He who lov'd best, and them defended best,  
 Whose hand so rudely grasps the steely brand,

Whose hand so gently melts the ladies hand,  
 They all in mutiny, though yet undrest,  
 Sally'd, and would in his defence contest.  
 And one, the loveliest that was yet e're seen,  
 Thinking that I too of the rout had been,  
 Mine eyes invaded with a female spight  
 (She knew what pain 't would be to lose that sight).  
 O no, mistake not, I reply'd: for I  
 In your defence, or in his cause, would dy.  
 But he, secure of glory and of time,  
 Above their envy or mine aid doth clime.  
 Him valianst men and fairest nymphs approve,  
 His booke in them finds judgement, with you, love.  
 Andr. Marvell

## TO COLONEL RICHARD LOVELACE, ON THE PUBLISHING OF HIS INGENIOUS POEMS.

If the desire of glory speak a mind  
 More nobly operative and more refin'd,  
 What vast soule moves thee, or what hero's spirit  
 (Kept in'ts traduction pure) dost thou inherit,  
 That, not contented with one single fame,  
 Dost to a double glory spread thy name,  
 And on thy happy temples safely set  
 Both th' Delphick wreath and civic coronet?  
 Was't not enough for us to know how far  
 Thou couldst in season suffer, act and dare  
 But we must also witnesse, with what height  
 And what Ionick sweetnesse thou canst write,  
 And melt those eager passions, that are  
 Stubborn enough t' enrage the god of war  
 Into a noble love, which may expire<9.1>  
 In an illustrious pyramid of fire;  
 Which, having gained his due station, may  
 Fix there, and everlasting flames display.  
 This is the braver path: time soone can smother  
 The dear-bought spoils and tropheis of the other.  
 How many fiery heroes have there been,  
 Whose triumphs were as soone forgot as seen?  
 Because they wanted some diviner one  
 To rescue <thee> from night, and make <thee> known.  
 Such art thou to thy selfe. While others dream  
 Strong flatt'ries on a fain'd or borrow'd theam,  
 Thou shalt remaine in thine owne lustre bright,  
 And adde unto 't LUCASTA'S chaster light.  
 For none so fit to sing great things as he,  
 That can act o're all lights of poetry.  
 Thus had Achilles his owne gests design'd,  
 He had his genius Homer far outshin'd.  
 Jo. Hall.<<9.2>>

<9.1> Original has ASPIRE.

<9.2> The precocious author of HORAE VACIVAE, 1646, and of a volume of poems which was printed in the same year. In the LUCASTA are some complimentary lines by Lovelace on Hall's translation of the commentary of Hierocles on the Golden Verses of Pythagoras, 1657.

## TO THE HONORABLE, VALIANT, AND INGENIOUS COLONEL RICHARD LOVELACE, ON HIS EXQUISITE POEMS.

Poets and painters have some near relation,

Compar'd with fancy and imagination;  
The one paints shadowed persons (in pure kind),  
The other paints the pictures of the mind  
In purer verse. And as rare Zeuxes fame  
Shin'd, till Apelles art eclips'd the same  
By a more exquisite and curious line  
In Zeuxeses (with pensill far more fine),  
So have our modern poets late done well,  
Till thine appear'd (which scarce have paralel).

They like to Zeuxes grapes beguile the sense,  
But thine do ravish the intelligence,  
Like the rare banquet of Apelles, drawn,  
And covered over with most curious lawn.

Thus if thy careles draughts are cal'd the best,  
What would thy lines have beene, had'st thou profest  
That faculty (infus'd) of poetry,  
Which adds such honour unto thy chivalry?  
Doubtles thy verse had all as far transcended  
As Sydneys Prose, who Poets once defended.

For when I read thy much renowned pen,  
My fancy there finds out another Ben  
In thy brave language, judgement, wit, and art,  
Of every piece of thine, in every part:  
Where thy seraphique Sydneyan fire is raised high  
In valour, vertue, love, and loyalty.

Virgil was styl'd the loftiest of all,  
Ovid the smoothest and most naturall;  
Martiall concise and witty, quaint and pure,  
Iuvenall grave and learned, though obscure.

But all these rare ones which I heere rehearse,  
Do live againe in Thee, and in thy Verse:  
Although not in the language of their time,  
Yet in a speech as copious and sublime.

The rare Apelles in thy picture wee  
Perceive, and in thy soule Apollo see.  
Wel may each Grace and Muse then crown thy praise  
With Mars his banner and Minerva's bayes.

Fra. Lenton.<10.1>

<10.1> The author of the YOUNG GALLANT'S WHIRLIGIGG, 1629, and other poetical works. Singer does not give these lines. In the WHIRLIGIG there is a curious picture of a young gallant of the time of Charles I., to which Lovelace might have sat, had he been old enough at the time. But Lenton had no want of sitters for his portrait.

## TO HIS HONOURED AND INGENIOUS FRIEND, COLONEL RICHARD LOVELACE, ON HIS "LUCASTA."

Chast as Creation meant us, and more bright  
Then the first day in 's unecipsed light,  
Is thy LUCASTA; and thou offerest heere  
Lines to her name as undefil'd and cleere;  
Such as the first indeed more happy dayes  
(When vertue, wit, and learning wore the bayes  
Now vice assumes) would to her memory give:  
A Vestall flame that should for ever live,  
Plac't in a christal temple, rear'd to be  
The Embleme of her thoughts integrity;  
And on the porch thy name insculpt, my friend,  
Whose love, like to the flame, can know no end.  
The marble step that to the alter brings  
The hallowed priests with their clean offerings,  
Shall hold their names that humbly crave to be  
Votaries to th' shrine, and grateful friends to thee.

So shal we live (although our offrings prove  
Meane to the world) for ever by thy love.

Tho. Rawlins.<11.1>

<11.1> A well known dramatist and poet. These lines are not in Singer's reprint.

## TO MY DEAR BROTHER, COLONEL RICHARD LOVELACE.

Ile doe my nothing too, and try  
To dabble to thy memory.  
Not that I offer to thy name  
Encomiums of thy lasting fame.  
Those by the landed have been writ:  
Mine's but a yonger-brother wit;  
A wit that's hudled up in scarres,  
Borne like my rough selfe in the warres;  
And as a Squire in the fight  
Serves only to attend the Knight,  
So 'tis my glory in this field,  
Where others act, to beare thy shield.

Dudley Lovelace, Capt.<12.1>

<12.1> The youngest brother of the poet. Besides the present lines, and some to be found in the posthumous volume, of which he was the editor, this gentleman contributed the following commendatory poem to AYRES AND DIALOGUES [by Thomas Stanley Esq.] set by John Gamble, 1656. The verses themselves have little merit; and the only object which I had in introducing them, was to add to the completeness of the present edition:—

## TO MY MUCH HONORED COZEN, MR. STANLEY, UPON HIS POEMS SET BY MR. JOHN GAMBLE.

### I.

Enough, enough of orbs and spheres,  
Reach me a trumpet or a drum,  
To sound sharp synnets in your ears,  
And beat a deep encomium.

### II.

I know not th' Eight Intelligence:  
Those that do understand it, pray  
Let them step hither, and from thence  
Speak what they all do sing or say:

### III.

Nor what your diapasons are,  
Your sympathies and symphonies;  
To me they seem as distant farre  
As whence they take their infant rise.

### IV.

But I've a grateful heart can ring  
A peale of ordnance to your praise,  
And volleys of small plaudits bring  
To cloud a crown about your baies.

### V.

Though laurel is thought thunder free,  
That storms and lightning disallows,  
Yet Caesar thorough fire and sea  
Snatches her to twist his conquering brows.

### VI.

And now me thinks like him you stand  
I' th' head of all the Poets' hoast,  
Whilest with your words you do command,  
They silent do their duty boast.



VII.

Which done, the army echoes o're,  
Like Gamble Ios one and all,  
And in their various notes implore,  
Long live our noble Generall.  
Dudley Posthumus Lovelace.

DE DOMINO RICHARDO LOVELACIO,  
ARMIGERO ET CHILIARCHA, <13.1> VIRO INCOMPARABILI.

Ecce tibi, heroi claris natalibus orto; <13.2>  
Cujus honoratos Cantia vidit avos.  
Cujus adhuc memorat rediviva Batavia patrem,  
Inter et Herculeos enumerare solet.  
Qui tua Grollaferox, laceratus vulnere multo,  
Fulmineis vidit moenia Pacta globis.  
Et cum saeva tuas fudisset Iberia turmas,  
Afflatu pyrii pulveris ictus obit.  
Haec sint magna: tamen major majoribus hic est,  
Nititur et pennis altius ire novis.  
Sermonem patrium callentem et murmura Celtae,  
Non piguit linguas edidicisse duas.  
Quicquid Roma vetus, vel quicquid Graecia jactat,  
Musarum nutrix alma Calena dedit.  
Gnaviter Hesperios compressit Marte cachinnos,  
Devictasque dedit Cantaber ipse manus.  
Non evitavit validos Dunkerka lacertos,  
Non intercludens alta Lacuna vias,  
Et scribenda gerens vivaci marmore digna,  
Scribere Caesareo more vel ipse potest.  
Cui gladium Bellona dedit, calamumque Minerva,  
Et geminae Laurus circuit umbra comam.  
Cujus si faciem spectes vultusque decorem,  
Vix puer Idalius gratior ore fuit.

<13.1> Strictly speaking, the officer in command of a thousand men, from the Greek <<chiliarches>>, or <<chiliarchos>>, but in the present instance meaning nothing more than Colonel.

<13.2> I have amended the text of these lines, which in the original is very corrupt. I suppose that the compositor was left to himself, as usual.

AD EUNDEM.

Herrico succede meo: dedit ille priora  
Carmina, carminibus non meliora tuis. <14.1>

<14.1> Herrick's HESPERIDES had appeared in 1648.

<<PERI TOY AYTOY.

Aoulakios pollaplasios philos estin emeio.  
Tounoma esti philos, kai to noema philos.  
Kai phylon antiphylo megaloisin agaklyton ergois:  
Tes aretes cheiros kai phrenos anchinoos.  
Hos neos en tythais pinytos selidessin etheke  
Poieton ekaston chromat epagromenos.  
Phrouroun Mousaon, pokinon essena Melisson,  
En Charitessi charin, kai Meleessi meli.>>  
Scripsit Jo. Harmarus,  
Oxonienis, C. W. M. <15.1>

<15.1> A celebrated scholar and philologist. An account of him will be found in Bliss's edition of Wood's ATHENAE. He published an Elegy on St. Alban the Protomartyr and an Apology for Archbishop Williams, and edited Scapula. These lines are omitted by Singer.

## POEMS.

### SONG.

SET BY MR. HENRY LAWES. <16.1>  
TO LUCASTA. GOING BEYOND THE SEAS.

#### I.

If to be absent were to be  
Away from thee;  
Or that when I am gone,  
You or I were alone;  
Then my LUCASTA might I crave  
Pity from blustering winde or swallowing wave.

#### II.

But I'll not sigh one blast or gale  
To swell my saile,  
Or pay a teare to swage  
The foaming blew-gods rage;  
For whether he will let me passe  
Or no, I'm still as happy as I was.

#### III.

Though seas and land betwixt us both,  
Our faith and troth,  
Like separated soules,  
All time and space controules:  
Above the highest sphere wee meet,  
Unseene, unknowne, and greet as angels greet

#### IV.

So then we doe anticipate  
Our after-fate,  
And are alive i'th' skies,  
If thus our lips and eyes  
Can speake like spirits unconfi'd  
In Heav'n, their earthy bodies left behind.

<16.1> Of Henry and William Lawes an account may be found in Burney and Hawkins. Although the former (H. Lawes) set many of Lovelace's pieces to music, only two occur in the AYRES AND DIALOGUES FOR ONE, TWO, AND THREE VOYCES, 1653-55-8, folio.

## SONG. SET BY MR. JOHN LANIERE. TO LUCASTA. GOING TO THE WARRES.

#### I.

Tell me not, (sweet,) I am unkinde,  
That from the nunnerie  
Of thy chaste breast and quiet minde  
To warre and armes I flie.

#### II.

True: a new Mistresse now I chase,  
The first foe in the field;  
And with a stronger faith imbrace  
A sword, a horse, a shield.

#### III.

Yet this inconstancy is such,

As you too shall adore;  
I could not love thee, dear, so much,  
Lov'd I not Honour more.

## A PARADOX.

### I.

Tis true the beauteous Starre<17.1>  
To which I first did bow  
Burnt quicker, brighter far,  
Than that which leads me now;  
Which shines with more delight,  
For gazing on that light  
So long, neere lost my sight.

### II.

Through foul we follow faire,  
For had the world one face,  
And earth been bright as ayre,  
We had knowne neither place.  
Indians smell not their neast;  
A Swisse or Finne tastes best  
The spices of the East.<17.2>

### III.

So from the glorious Sunne  
Who to his height hath got,  
With what delight we runne  
To some black cave or grot!  
And, heav'nly Sydney you  
Twice read, had rather view  
Some odde romance so new.

### IV.

The god, that constant keepes  
Unto his deities,  
Is poore in joyes, and sleepes  
Imprison'd in the skies.  
This knew the wisest, who  
From Juno stole, below  
To love a bear or cow.

<17.1> i.e. LUCASTA.

<17.2> The East was celebrated by all our early poets as the land of spices and rich gums:—

"For now the fragrant East,  
The spicery o' th' world,  
Hath hurl'd  
A rosie tincture o'er the Phoenix nest."

OTIA SACRA, by Mildmay, Earl of Westmoreland, 1648, p. 37.

## SONG.

SET BY MR. HENRY LAWES.

TO AMARANTHA;<18.1> THAT SHE WOULD DISHEVELL HER HAIRE.

### I.

Amarantha sweet and faire,  
Ah brade<18.2> no more that shining haire!  
As my curious hand or eye,  
Hovering round thee, let it flye.

### II.

Let it flye as unconfin'd

As it's calme ravisher, the winde,  
Who hath left his darling, th' East,  
To wanton o're that<18.3> spicie neast.

III.

Ev'ry tresse must be confest:  
But neatly tangled at the best;  
Like a clue of golden thread,  
Most excellently ravelled.

IV.

Doe not then winde up that light  
In ribands, and o'er-cloud in night,  
Like the sun in's early ray;  
But shake your head, and scatter day.

V.

See, 'tis broke! within this grove,  
The bower and the walkes of love,  
Weary lye we downe and rest,  
And fanne each other's panting breast.

VI.

Heere wee'll strippe and coole our fire,  
In creame below, in milk-baths<18.4> higher:  
And when all wells are drawne dry,  
I'll drink a teare out of thine eye.

VII.

Which our very joys shall leave,  
That sorrowes thus we can deceive;  
Or our very sorrowes weepe,  
That joyes so ripe so little keepe.

<18.1> A portion of this song is printed, with a few orthographical variations, in the AYRES AND DIALOGUES, part i. 1653; and it is also found in Cotgrave's WITS INTERPRETER, 1655, where it is called "Amarantha counselled." Cotgrave used the text of Lawes, and only gives that part of the production which he found in AYRES AND DIALOGUES.

<18.2> Forbear to brade—Lawes' AYRES AND DIALOGUES, and Cotgrave.

<18.3> This—Lawes' AYRES AND DIALOGUES. Cotgrave reads HIS.

<18.4> Milk-baths have been a favourite luxury in all ages. Peele had probably in his mind the custom of his own time and country when he wrote the following passage:—

"Bright Bethsabe shall wash in David's bower,  
In water mix'd with purest almond flower,  
And bathe her beauty in the milk of kids."  
KING DAVID AND FAIR BETHSABE, 1599.

## SONNET. SET BY MR. HUDSON.

I.

Depose your finger of that ring,  
And crowne mine with't awhile;  
Now I restor't. Pray, dos it bring  
Back with it more of soile?  
Or shines it not as innocent,  
As honest, as before 'twas lent?

II.

So then inrich me with that treasure,  
'Twill but increase your store,  
And please me (faire one) with that pleasure  
Must please you still the more.

Not to save others is a curse  
The blackest, when y'are ne're the worse.

ODE.  
SET BY DR. JOHN WILSON.<19.1>  
TO LUCASTA. THE ROSE.

I.

Sweet serene skye-like flower,  
Haste to adorn her bower;  
From thy long cloudy bed  
Shoot forth thy damaske<19.2> head.

II.

New-startled blush of FLORA!  
The grieffe of pale AURORA,  
Who will contest no more,  
Haste, haste, to strowe her floore.

III.

Vermilion ball, that's given  
From lip to lip in Heaven;  
Loves couches cover-led,  
Haste, haste, to make her bed.

IV.

Dear offspring of pleas'd VENUS,  
And jollie plumpe SILENUS;  
Haste, haste, to decke the haire,  
Of th' only sweetly faire.

V.

See! rosie is her bower,  
Her floore is all this flower;  
Her bed a rosie nest  
By a bed of roses prest.

VI.

But early as she dresses,  
Why fly you her bright tresses?  
Ah! I have found, I feare;  
Because her cheekes are neere.

<19.1> Dr. John Wilson was a native of Feversham in Kent, a gentleman of Charles the First's chapel, and chamber-musician to his majesty. For an account of his works, see Burney's HISTORY OF MUSIC, vol. iii. pp. 399-400, or Hawkins' HISTORY OF MUSIC, iii. 57, where a portrait of Wilson, taken from the original painting, will be found. Wood, author of the FASTI and ATHENAE, says that he was in his time, "the best at the lute in all England." Herrick, in his HESPERIDES, 1648, has these lines in reference to Henry Lawes:—

"Then if thy voice commingle with the string,  
I hear in thee the rare Laniere to sing,  
OR CURIOUS WILSON."

<19.2> In a MS. copy of the poem contemporary with the author, now before me, this word is omitted.

LOVE CONQUER'D. A SONG. SET BY MR. HENRY LAWES.

I.

The childish god of love did sweare  
Thus: By my awfull bow and quiver,  
Yon' weeping, kissing, smiling pair,  
I'le scatter all their vowes i' th' ayr,

And their knit imbraces shiver.

II.

Up then to th' head with his best art  
Full of spite and envy blowne,  
At her constant marble heart,  
He drawes his swiftest surest dart,  
Which bounded back, and hit his owne.

III.

Now the prince of fires burnes;  
Flames in the luster of her eyes;  
Triumphant she, refuses, scornes;  
He submits, adores and mournes,  
And is his votresse sacrifice.

IV.

Foolish boy! resolve me now  
What 'tis to sigh and not be heard?  
He weeping kneel'd, and made a vow:  
The world shall love as yon' fast two;  
So on his sing'd wings up he steer'd.

A LOOSE SARABAND. SET BY MR. HENRY LAWES.

I.

Ah me! the little tyrant theefe!  
As once my heart was playing,  
He snatcht it up and flew away,  
Laughing at all my praying.

II.

Proud of his purchase, <20.1> he surveys  
And curiously sounds it,  
And though he sees it full of wounds,  
Cruel one, still <20.2> he wounds it.

III.

And now this heart is all his sport,  
Which as a ball he boundeth  
From hand to breast, from breast to lip,  
And all its <20.3> rest confoundeth.

IV.

Then as a top he sets it up,  
And pitifully whips it;  
Sometimes he cloathes it gay and fine,  
Then straight againe he strips it.

V.

He cover'd it with false reliefe, <20.4>  
Which gloriously show'd it;  
And for a morning-cushionet  
On's mother he bestow'd it.

VI.

Each day, with her small brazen stings,  
A thousand times she rac'd it;  
But then at night, bright with her gemmes,  
Once neere her breast she plac'd it.

VII.

There warme it gan to throb and bleed;  
She knew that smart, and grieved;  
At length this poore condemned heart

With these rich drugges repreeved.

VIII.

She washt the wound with a fresh teare,  
Which my LUCASTA dropped,  
And in the sleeve<20.5>-silke of her haire  
'Twas hard bound up and wrapped.

IX.

She proab'd it with her constancie,  
And found no rancor nigh it;  
Only the anger of her eye  
Had wrought some proud flesh by it.

X.

Then prest she narde in ev'ry veine,  
Which from her kisses trilled;  
And with the balme heald all its paine,  
That from her hand distilled.

XI.

But yet this heart avoyds me still,  
Will not by me be owned;  
But's fled to its physitian's breast;  
There proudly sits inthroned.

<20.1> Prize. It is not uncommonly used by the early dramatists in this sense; but the verb TO PURCHASE is more usually found than the noun.

"Yet having opportunity, he tries,  
Gets her goodwill, and with his purchase flies."  
Wither's ABUSES STRIPT AND WHIPT, 1613.

<20.2> Here I have hazarded an emendation of the text. In original we read, CRUELL STILL ON. Lovelace's poems were evidently printed without the slightest care.

<20.3> Original reads IT'S.

<20.4> Original has BELIEFE.

<<20.5>> Soft, like floss.

ORPHEUS TO WOODS. SONG. SET BY MR. CURTES.

Heark! Oh heark! you guilty trees,  
In whose gloomy galleries  
Was the cruell'st murder done,  
That e're yet eclipst the sunne.  
Be then henceforth in your twigges  
Blasted, e're you sprout to sprigges;  
Feele no season of the yeere,  
But what shaves off all your haire,  
Nor carve any from your wombes  
Ought but coffins and their tombes.

ORPHEUS<21.1> TO BEASTS.

SONG.

SET BY MR. CURTES.<21.2>

I.

Here, here, oh here! EURIDICE,  
Here was she slaine;  
Her soule 'still'd through a veine:  
The gods knew lesse  
That time divinitie,

Then ev'n, ev'n these  
Of brutishnesse.

II.

Oh! could you view the melodie  
Of ev'ry grace,  
And musick of her face, <21.3>  
You'd drop a teare,  
Seeing more harmonie  
In her bright eye,  
Then now you heare.

<21.1> By Orpheus we may perhaps understand Lovelace himself, and by Euridice, the lady whom he celebrates under the name of Lucasta. Grainger mentions (BIOG. HIST. ii. 74) a portrait of Lovelace by Gaywood, in which he is represented as Orpheus. I have not seen it. The old poets were rather fond of likening themselves to this legendary personage, or of designating themselves his poetical children:—

"We that are ORPHEUS' sons, and can inherit  
By that great title"—  
Davenant's WORKS, 1673, p. 215.

Many other examples might be given. Massinger, in his CITY MADAM, 1658, makes Sir John Frugal introduce a representation of the story of the Thracian bard at an entertainment given to Luke Frugal.

<21.2> A lutenist. Wood says that after the Restoration he became gentleman or singing-man of Christ Church, Oxford. He was one of those musicians who, after the abolition of organs, &c. during the civil war, met at a private house at Oxford for the purpose of taking his part in musical entertainments.

<21.3> "Such was Zuleika; such around her shone  
The nameless charms unmark'd by her alone;  
The light of love, the purity of grace,  
The mind, the music breathing from her face."  
Byron's BRIDE OF ABYDOS, canto 1.  
(WORKS, ed. 1825, ii. 299.)

DIALOGUE.

LUCASTA, ALEXIS. <22.1>  
SET BY MR. JOHN GAMBLE. <22.2>

I.

Lucasta.

TELL me, ALEXIS, what this parting is,  
That so like dying is, but is not it?

Alexis.

It is a swounding for a while from blisse,  
'Till kind HOW DOE YOU call's us from the fit.

Chorus.

If then the spirits only stray, let mine  
Fly to thy bosome, and my soule to thine:  
Thus in our native seate we gladly give  
Our right for one, where we can better live.

II.

Lu. But ah, this ling'ring, murdring farewell!  
Death quickly wounds, and wounding cures the ill.  
Alex. It is the glory of a valiant lover,  
Still to be dying, still for to recover.

Cho. Soldiers suspected of their courage goe,  
That ensignes and their breasts untorne show:  
Love nee're his standard, when his hoste he sets,  
Creates alone fresh-bleeding bannerets.

III.



Alex. But part we, when thy figure I retaine  
Still in my heart, still strongly in mine eye?  
Lu. Shadowes no longer than the sun remaine,  
But <whee> his beams, that made 'em, fly, they fly.  
Cho. Vaine dreames of love! that only so much blisse  
Allow us, as to know our wretchednesse;  
And deale a larger measure in our paine  
By showing joy, then hiding it againe.

IV.

Alex. No, whilst light raings, LUCASTA still rules here,  
And all the night shines wholly in this sphere.  
Lu. I know no morne but my ALEXIS ray,  
To my dark thoughts the breaking of the day.

Chorus.

Alex. So in each other if the pitying sun  
Thus keep us fixt, nere may his course be run!  
Lu. And oh! if night us undivided make;  
Let us sleepe still, and sleeping never wake!

The close.

Cruel ADIEUS may well adjourne awhile  
The sessions of a looke, a kisse, or smile,  
And leave behinde an angry grieving blush;  
But time nor fate can part us joynd thus.

<22.1> i.e. the poet himself.

<22.2> "John Gamble, apprentice to Ambrose Beyland, a noted musician, was afterwards musician at one of the playhouses; from thence removed to be a cornet in the King's Chapel. After that he became one in Charles the Second's band of violins, and composed for the theatres. He published AYRES AND DIALOGUES TO THE THEORBO AND BASS VIOL, fol. Lond., 1659."—Hawkins.

SONNET. SET BY MR. WILLIAM LAWES.

I.

When I by thy faire shape did sweare,  
And mingled with each vowe a teare,  
I lov'd, I lov'd thee best,  
I swore as I profest.  
For all the while you lasted warme and pure,  
My oathes too did endure.  
But once turn'd faithlesse to thy selfe and old,  
They then with thee incessantly<23.1> grew cold.

II.

I swore my selfe thy sacrifice  
By th' ebon bowes<23.2> that guard thine eyes,  
Which now are alter'd white,  
And by the glorious light  
Of both those stars, which of<23.3> their spheres bereft,  
Only the gellie's left.  
Then changed thus, no more I'm bound to you,  
Then swearing to a saint that proves untrue.

<23.1> i.e. at once, immediately.

<23.2> Her eyebrows.

<23.3> Original reads OF WHICH.

LUCASTA WEEPING. SONG. SET BY MR. JOHN LANEERE.

I.

Lucasta wept, and still the bright  
Inamour'd god of day,  
With his soft handkercher of light,  
Kist the wet pearles away.

II.

But when her teares his heate or'ecame,  
In cloudes he quensht his beames,  
And griev'd, wept out his eye of flame,  
So drowned her sad streames.

III.<24.1>

At this she smiled, when straight the sun  
Cleer'd by her kinde desires;  
And by her eyes reflexion  
Fast kindl'd there his fires.

<24.1> This stanza is not found in the printed copy of LUCASTA, 1649, but it occurs in a MS. of this poem written, with many compositions by Lovelace and other poets, in a copy of Crashaw's POEMS, 1648, 12mo, a portion of which having been formed of the printer's proof-sheets, some of the pages are printed only on one side, the reverse being covered with MSS. poems, among the rest with epigrams by MR. THOMAS FULLER (about fifty in number). There can be little doubt, from the character of the majority of these little poems, that by "Mr. Thomas Fuller" we may understand the church-historian.

TO LUCASTA. FROM PRISON  
AN EPODE.<25.1>

I.

Long in thy shackels, liberty  
I ask not from these walls, but thee;  
Left for awhile anothers bride,  
To fancy all the world beside.

II.

Yet e're I doe begin to love,  
See, how I all my objects prove;  
Then my free soule to that confine,  
'Twere possible I might call mine.

III.

First I would be in love with PEACE,  
And her rich swelling breasts increase;  
But how, alas! how may that be,  
Despising earth, she will love me?

IV.

Faine would I be in love with WAR,  
As my deare just avenging star;  
But War is lov'd so ev'rywhere,  
Ev'n he disdaines a lodging here.

V.

Thee and thy wounds I would bemoane,  
Faire thorough-shot RELIGION;  
But he lives only that kills thee,  
And who so bindes thy hands, is free.

VI.

I would love a PARLIAMENT  
As a maine prop from Heav'n sent;  
But ah! who's he, that would be wedded  
To th' fairest body that's beheaded?

VII.

Next would I court my LIBERTY,

And then my birth-right, PROPERTY;  
But can that be, when it is knowne,  
There's nothing you can call your owne?

VIII.

A REFORMATION I would have,  
As for our griefes a SOV'RAIGNE salve;  
That is, a cleansing of each wheele  
Of state, that yet some rust doth feele.

IX.

But not a reformation so,  
As to reforme were to ore'throw,  
Like watches by unskilfull men  
Disjoynted, and set ill againe.

X.

The PUBLICK FAITH<25.2> I would adore,  
But she is banke-rupt of her store:  
Nor how to trust her can I see,  
For she that couzens all, must me.

XI.

Since then none of these can be  
Fit objects for my love and me;  
What then remaines, but th' only spring  
Of all our loves and joyes, the King?

XII.

He who, being the whole ball  
Of day on earth, lends it to all;  
When seeking to ecclipse his right,  
Blinded we stand in our owne light.

XIII.

And now an universall mist  
Of error is spread or'e each breast,  
With such a fury edg'd as is  
Not found in th' inwards of th' abyссе.

XIV.

Oh, from thy glorious starry waine  
Dispense on me one sacred beame,  
To light me where I soone may see  
How to serve you, and you trust me!

<25.1> This was written, perhaps, during the poet's confinement in Peterhouse, to which he was committed a prisoner on his return from abroad in 1648. At the date of its composition, there can be little doubt, from expressions in stanzas vi. and xii. that the fortunes of Charles I. were at their lowest ebb, and it may be assigned without much risk of error to the end of 1648.

<25.2> "The publick faith? why 'tis a word of kin,  
A nephew that dares COZEN any sin;  
A term of art, great BEHOMOTH'S younger brother,  
Old MACHAVIEL and half a thousand other;  
Which, when subscrib'd, writes LEGION, names on truss,  
ABADDON, BELZEBUB, and INCUBUS."  
Cleaveland's POEMS, ed. 1669, p. 91.

LUCASTA'S FANNE, WITH A LOOKING-GLASSE IN IT.<26.1>

I.

Eastrich!<26.2> thou featherd foole, and easie prey,  
That larger sailes to thy broad vessell needst;  
Snakes through thy guttur-neck hisse all the day,  
Then on thy iron messe at supper feedst.<26.3>

II.

O what a glorious transmigration  
From this to so divine an edifice  
Hast thou straight made! heere<26.4> from a winged stone  
Transform'd into a bird of paradise!

III.

Now doe thy plumes for hiew and luster vie  
With th' arch of heav'n that triumphs or'e past wet,  
And in a rich enamel'd pinion lye  
With saphyres, amethysts and opalls set.

IV.

Sometime they wing her side,<26.5> <thee> strive to drown  
The day's eyes piercing beames, whose am'rous heat  
Sollicites still, 'till with this shield of downe  
From her brave face his glowing fires are beat.

V.

But whilst a plummy curtaine she doth draw,  
A chrystall mirror sparkles in thy breast,  
In which her fresh aspect when as she saw,  
And then her foe<26.6> retired to the west.

VI.

Deare engine, that oth' sun got'st me the day,  
'Spite of his hot assaults mad'st him retreat!  
No wind (said she) dare with thee henceforth play  
But mine own breath to coole the tyrants heat.

VII.

My lively shade thou ever shalt retaine  
In thy inclosed feather-framed glasse,  
And but unto our selves to all remaine  
Invisible, thou feature of this face!

VIII.

So said, her sad swaine over-heard and cried:  
Yee Gods! for faith unstaind this a reward!  
Feathers and glasse t'outweigh my vertue tryed!  
Ah! show their empty strength! the gods accord.

IX.

Now fall'n the brittle favourite lyes and burst!  
Amas'd LUCASTA weepes, repents and flies  
To her ALEXIS, vowes her selfe acurst,  
If hence she dresse her selfe but in his eyes.

<26.1> This adaptation of the fan to the purposes of a mirror, now so common, was, as we here are told, familiar to the ladies of Lovelace's time. Mr. Fairholt, in his *COSTUME IN ENGLAND*, 1846, p. 496, describes many various forms which were given at different periods to this article of use and ornament; but the present passage in LUCASTA appears to have escaped his notice.

<26.2> Ostrich. Lyly, in his *EUPHUES*, 1579, sig. c 4, has ESTRIDGE. The fan here described was composed of ostrich-feathers set with precious stones.

<26.3> In allusion to the digestive powers of this bird.

<26.4> Original reads NEERE.

<26.5> The poet means that Lucasta, when she did not require her fan for immediate use, wore it suspended at her side or from her girdle.

<26.6> The sun.

I.

Yee happy floods! that now must passe  
The sacred conduicts of her wombe,  
Smooth and transparent as your face,  
When you are deafe, and windes are dumbe.

II.

Be proud! and if your waters be  
Foul'd with a counterfeyted teare,  
Or some false sigh hath stained yee,  
Haste, and be purified there.

III.

And when her rosie gates y'have trac'd,  
Continue yet some Orient wet,  
'Till, turn'd into a gemme, y'are plac'd  
Like diamonds with rubies set.

IV.

Yee drops, that dew th' Arabian bowers,  
Tell me, did you e're smell or view  
On any leafe of all your flowers  
Soe sweet a sent, so rich a hiew?

V.

But as through th' Organs of her breath  
You trickle wantonly, beware:  
Ambitious Seas in their just death  
As well as Lovers, must have share.

VI.

And see! you boyle as well as I;  
You, that to coole her did aspire,  
Now troubled and neglected lye,  
Nor can your selves quench your owne fire.

VII.

Yet still be happy in the thought,  
That in so small a time as this,  
Through all the Heavens you were brought  
Of Vertue, Honour, Love and Blisse.

<27.1> From this it might be conjectured, though the ground for doing so would be very slight, that LUCASTA was a native of Kent or of one of the adjoining shires; but against this supposition we have to set the circumstance that elsewhere this lady is called a "northern star."

TO LUCASTA. ODE LYRICK.

I.

Ah LUCASTA, why so bright?  
Spread with early streaked light!  
If still veiled from our sight,  
What is't but eternall night?

II.

Ah LUCASTA, why so chaste?  
With that vigour, ripenes grac't,  
Not to be by Man imbrac't  
Makes that Royall coyne imbace't,  
And this golden Orchard waste!

III.

Ah LUCASTA, why so great,  
That thy crammed coffers sweat?  
Yet not owner of a seat

May shelter you from Natures heat,  
And your earthly joyes compleat.

IV.

Ah Lucasta, why so good?  
Blest with an unstained flood  
Flowing both through soule and blood;  
If it be not understood,  
'Tis a Diamond in mud.

V.

LUCASTA! stay! why dost thou flye?  
Thou art not bright but to the eye,  
Nor chaste but in the mariage-tye,  
Nor great but in this treasurie,  
Nor good but in that sanctitie.

VI.

Harder then the Orient stone,  
Like an apparition,  
Or as a pale shadow gone,  
Dumbe and deafe she hence is flowne.

VII.

Then receive this equall dombe:  
Virgins, strow no teare or bloome,  
No one dig the Parian wombe;  
Raise her marble heart i'th' roome,  
And 'tis both her coarse and tombe.

LUCASTA PAYING HER OBSEQUIES TO THE CHAST MEMORY  
OF MY DEAREST COSIN MRS. BOWES BARNE[S].<28.1>

I.

See! what an undisturbed teare  
She weepes for her last sleepe;  
But, viewing her, straight wak'd a Star,  
She weepes that she did weepe.

II.

Griefe ne're before did tyranize  
On th' honour of that brow,  
And at the wheelles of her brave eyes  
Was captive led til now.

III.

Thus, for a saints apostacy  
The unimagin'd woes  
And sorrowes of the Hierarchy  
None but an angel knowes.

IV.

Thus, for lost soules recovery  
The clapping of all wings  
And triumphs of this victory  
None but an angel sings.

V.

So none but she knows to bemone  
This equal virgins fate,  
None but LUCASTA can her crowne  
Of glory celebrate.

VI.

Then dart on me (CHAST LIGHT)<28.2> one ray,  
By which I may discry

Thy joy cleare through this cloudy day  
To dresse my sorrow by.

<28.1> This lady was probably the wife of a descendant of Sir William Barnes, of Woolwich, whose only daughter and heir, Anne, married the poet's father, and brought him the seat in Kent. See GENTS. MAGAZINE for 1791, part ii. 1095.

<28.2> A translation of LUCASTA, or LUX CASTA, for the sake of the metre.

UPON THE CURTAINE OF LUCASTA'S PICTURE,  
IT WAS THUS WROUGHT.<29.1>

Oh, stay that covetous hand; first turn all eye,  
All depth and minde; then mystically spye  
Her soul's faire picture, her faire soul's, in all  
So truely copied from th' originall,  
That you will sweare her body by this law  
Is but its shadow, as this, its;—now draw.

<29.1> Pictures used formerly to have curtains before them. It is still done in some old houses. In WESTWARD HOE, 1607, act ii. scene 3, there is an allusion to this practice:—

"SIR GOSLING. So draw those curtains, and let's see the pictures under 'em."—Webster's WORKS, ed. Hazlitt, i. 133.

LUCASTA'S WORLD. EPODE.

I.

Cold as the breath of winds that blow  
To silver shot descending snow,  
Lucasta sigh't;<30.1> when she did close  
The world in frosty chaines!  
And then a frowne to rubies frose  
The blood boyl'd in our veines:  
Yet cooled not the heat her sphere  
Of beauties first had kindled there.

II.

Then mov'd, and with a suddaine flame  
Impatient to melt all againe,  
Straight from her eyes she lightning hurl'd,  
And earth in ashes mournes;  
The sun his blaze denies the world,  
And in her luster burnes:  
Yet warmed not the hearts, her nice  
Disdaine had first congeal'd to ice.

III.

And now her teares nor griev'd desire  
Can quench this raging, pleasing fire;  
Fate but one way allowes; behold  
Her smiles' divinity!  
They fann'd this heat, and thaw'd that cold,  
So fram'd up a new sky.  
Thus earth, from flames and ice repreev'd,  
E're since hath in her sun-shine liv'd.

<30.1> Original reads SIGHT.

THE APOSTACY OF ONE, AND BUT ONE LADY.

## I.

That frantick error I adore,  
 And am confirm'd the earth turns round;  
 Now satisfied o're and o're,  
 As rowling waves, so flowes the ground,  
 And as her neighbour reels the shore:  
 Finde such a woman says she loves;  
 She's that fixt heav'n, which never moves.

## II.

In marble, steele, or porphyrie,  
 Who carves or stampe his armes or face,  
 Lookes it by rust or storme must dye:  
 This womans love no time can raze,  
 Hardned like ice in the sun's eye,  
 Or your reflection in a glasse,  
 Which keepes possession, though you passe.

## III.

We not behold a watches hand  
 To stir, nor plants or flowers to grow;  
 Must we infer that this doth stand,  
 And therefore, that those do not blow?  
 This she acts calmer, like Heav'ns brand,  
 The stedfast lightning, slow loves dart,  
 She kills, but ere we feele the smart.

## IV.

Oh, she is constant as the winde,  
 That revels in an ev'nings aire!  
 Certaine as wayes unto the blinde,  
 More reall then her flatt'ries are;  
 Gentle as chaines that honour binde,  
 More faithfull then an Hebrew Jew,  
 But as the divel not halfe so true.

AMYNTOR<31.1> FROM BEYOND THE SEA TO ALEXIS.<31.2>

## A DIALOGUE.

Amyntor.

Alexis! ah Alexis! can it be,  
 Though so much wet and drie  
 Doth drowne our eye,  
 Thou keep'st thy winged voice from me?

Alexis.

Amyntor, a profounder sea, I feare,  
 Hath swallow'd me, where now  
 My armes do row,  
 I floate i'th' ocean of a teare.

Lucasta weepes, lest I look back and tread  
 Your Watry land againe.

Amyn. I'd through the raine;  
 Such showrs are quickly over-spread.

Conceive how joy, after this short divorce,  
 Will circle her with beames,  
 When, like your streames,  
 You shall rowle back with kinder force,

And call the helping winds to vent your thought.

Alex. Amyntor! Chloris! where  
 Or in what sphere



Say, may that glorious fair be sought?

Amyntor. She's now the center of these armes e're blest,  
Whence may she never move,  
Till Time and Love  
Haste to their everlasting rest.

Alexander. Ah subtle swaine! doth not my flame rise high  
As yours, and burne as hot?  
Am not I shot  
With the selfe same artillery?

And can I breath without her air?—Amyntor.  
Why, then,  
From thy tempestuous earth,  
Where blood and dearth  
Raigne 'stead of kings, agen

Waite thy selfe over, and lest storms from far  
Arise, bring in our sight  
The seas delight,  
Lucasta, that bright northerne star.

Alexander. But as we cut the rugged deepe, I feare  
The green god stops his fell  
Chariot of shell,  
And smooths the maine to ravish her.

Amyntor. Oh no, the prince of waters' fires are done;  
He as his empire's old,  
And rivers, cold;  
His queen now runs abed to th' sun;

But all his treasure he shall ope' that day:  
Tritons shall sound: his fleete  
In silver meete,  
And to her their rich offrings pay.

Alexander. We flye, Amyntor, not amaz'd how sent  
By water, earth, or aire:  
Or if with her  
By fire: ev'n there  
I move in mine owne element.

<31.1> Endymion Porter?

<31.2> Lovelace himself.

## CALLING LUCASTA FROM HER RETIREMENT. ODE.

### I.

From the dire monument of thy black roome,  
Wher now that vestal flame thou dost intombe,  
As in the inmost cell of all earths wombe.

### II.

Sacred Lucasta, like the pow'rfull ray  
Of heavenly truth, passe this Cimmerian way,  
Whilst all the standards of your beames display.

### III.

Arise and climbe our whitest, highest hill;  
There your sad thoughts with joy and wonder fill,  
And see seas calme<32.1> as earth, earth as your will.

### IV.

Behold! how lightning like a taper flies,  
And guilds your chari't, but ashamed dyes,  
Seeing it selfe out-gloried by your eyes.

V.

Threatning and boystrous tempests gently bow,  
And to your steps part in soft paths, when now  
There no where hangs a cloud, but on your brow.

VI.

No showrs but 'twixt your lids, nor gelid snow,  
But what your whiter, chaster brest doth ow, <32.2>  
Whilst winds in chains colder for <32.3> sorrow blow.

VII.

Shrill trumpets doe only sound to eate,  
Artillery hath loaden ev'ry dish with meate,  
And drums at ev'ry health alarmes beate.

VIII.

All things Lucasta, but Lucasta, call,  
Trees borrow tongues, waters in accents fall,  
The aire doth sing, and fire is <32.4> musicall.

IX.

Awake from the dead vault in which you dwell,  
All's loyall here, except your thoughts rebell  
Which, so let loose, often their gen'rall quell.

X.

See! she obeys! By all obeyed thus,  
No storms, heats, colds, no soules contentious,  
Nor civill war is found; I meane, to us.

XI.

Lovers and angels, though in heav'n they show,  
And see the woes and discords here below,  
What they not feele, must not be said to know.

<32.1> Original has COLME.

<32.2> i.e. own.

<32.3> Original reads YOUR.

<32.4> Original has FIRE'S, but FIRE IS is required by the metre, and it is probably what the poet wrote.

AMARANTHA.

A PASTORALL. <33.1>

Up with the jolly bird of light  
Who sounds his third retreat to night;  
Faire Amarantha from her bed  
Ashamed starts, and rises red  
As the carnation-mantled morne,  
Who now the blushing robe doth spurne,  
And puts on angry gray, whilst she,  
The envy of a deity,  
Arayes her limbes, too rich indeed  
To be inshrin'd in such a weed;  
Yet lovely 'twas and strait, but fit;  
Not made for her, but she to it:  
By nature it sate close and free,  
As the just bark unto the tree:  
Unlike Love's martyrs of the towne,

All day imprison'd in a gown,  
Who, ract in silke 'stead of a dresse,  
Are cloathed in a frame or presse,  
And with that liberty and room,  
The dead expatiate in a tombe.

No cabinets with curious washes,  
Bladders and perfumed plashes;  
No venome-temper'd water's here,  
Mercury is banished this sphere:  
Her payle's all this, in which wet glasse  
She both doth cleanse and view her face.

Far hence, all Iberian smells,  
Hot amulets, Pomander spells,  
Fragrant gales, cool ay'r, the fresh  
And naturall odour of her flesh,  
Proclaim her sweet from th' wombe as morne.  
Those colour'd things were made, not borne.  
Which, fixt within their narrow straits,  
Do looke like their own counterfeits.  
So like the Provance rose she walkt,  
Flowerd with blush, with verdure stalkt;  
Th' officious wind her loose hayre curles,  
The dewe her happy linnen purles,  
But wets a tresse, which instantly  
Sol with a crisping beame doth dry.

Into the garden is she come,  
Love and delight's Elisium;  
If ever earth show'd all her store,  
View her discolourd budding floore;  
Here her glad eye she largely feedes,  
And stands 'mongst them, as they 'mong weeds;  
The flowers in their best aray  
As to their queen their tribute pay,  
And freely to her lap proscribe  
A daughter out of ev'ry tribe.  
Thus as she moves, they all bequeath  
At once the incense of their breath.

The noble Heliotropian  
Now turnes to her, and knowes no sun.  
And as her glorious face doth vary,  
So opens loyall golden Mary<33.2>  
Who, if but glanced from her sight,  
Straight shuts again, as it were night.  
The violet (else lost ith' heap)  
Doth spread fresh purple for each step,  
With whose humility possest,  
Sh' inthrones the Poore Girle<33.3> in her breast:  
The July-flow'r<33.4> that hereto thriv'd,  
Knowing her self no longer-liv'd,  
But for one look of her upheaves,  
Then 'stead of teares straight sheds her leaves.

Now the rich robed Tulip who,  
Clad all in tissue close, doth woe  
Her (sweet to th' eye but smelling sower),  
She gathers to adorn her bower.

But the proud Hony-suckle spreads  
Like a pavilion her heads,  
Contemnes the wanting commonalty,  
That but to two ends usefull be,  
And to her lips thus aptly plac't,  
With smell and hue presents her tast.

So all their due obedience pay,  
Each thronging to be in her way:  
Faire Amarantha with her eye

Thanks those that live, which else would dye:  
The rest, in silken fetters bound,  
By crowning her are crown and crown'd.<33.5>

And now the sun doth higher rise,  
Our Flora to the meadow hies:  
The poore distressed heifers low,  
And as sh' approacheth gently bow,  
Begging her charitable leasure  
To strip them of their milkie treasure.

Out of the yeomanry oth' heard,  
With grave aspect, and feet prepar'd,  
A rev'rend lady-cow drawes neare,  
Bids Amarantha welcome here;  
And from her privy purse lets fall  
A pearle or two, which seeme[s] to call  
This adorn'd adored fayry  
To the banquet of her dayry.

Soft Amarantha weeps to see  
'Mongst men such inhumanitie,  
That those, who do receive in hay,  
And pay in silver<33.6> twice a day,  
Should by their cruell barb'rous theft  
Be both of that and life bereft.

But 'tis decreed, when ere this dies,  
That she shall fall a sacrifice  
Unto the gods, since those, that trace  
Her stemme, show 'tis a god-like race,  
Descending in an even line  
From heifers and from steeres divine,  
Making the honour'd extract full  
In Io and Europa's bull.  
She was the largest goodliest beast,  
That ever mead or altar blest;  
Round [w]as her udder, and more white  
Then is the Milkie Way in night;  
Her full broad eye did sparkle fire;  
Her breath was sweet as kind desire,  
And in her beauteous crescent shone,  
Bright as the argent-horned moone.

But see! this whiteness is obscure,  
Cynthia spotted, she impure;  
Her body writheld,<33.7> and her eyes  
Departing lights at obsequies:  
Her lowing hot to the fresh gale,  
Her breath perfumes the field withall;  
To those two suns that ever shine,  
To those plump parts she doth inshrine,  
To th' hovering snow of either hand,  
That love and cruelty command.

After the breakfast on her teat,  
She takes her leave oth' mournfull neat  
Who, by her toucht, now prizeth her<33.8> life,  
Worthy alone the hollowed knife.

Into the neighbring wood she's gone,  
Whose rooffe defies the tell-tale Sunne,  
And locks out ev'ry prying beame;  
Close by the lips of a cleare streame,  
She sits and entertaines her eye  
With the moist chrystall and the frye<33.9>  
With burnisht-silver mal'd, whose oares<33.10>  
Amazed still make to the shoares;  
What need she other bait or charm,  
What hook<33.11> or angle, but her arm?  
The happy captive, gladly ta'n,

Sues ever to be slave in vaine,  
Who instantly (confirm'd in's feares)  
Hasts to his element of teares.

From hence her various windings roave  
To a well-orderd stately grove;  
This is the pallace of the wood  
And court oth' Royall Oake, where stood  
The whole nobility: the Pine,  
Strait Ash, tall Firre, and wanton Vine;  
The proper Cedar, and the rest.  
Here she her deeper senses blest;  
Admires great Nature in this pile,  
Floor'd with greene-velvet Camomile,  
Garnisht with gems of unset fruit,  
Supply'd still with a self recruit;  
Her bosom wrought with pretty eyes  
Of never-planted Strawberries;  
Where th' winged musick of the ayre  
Do richly feast, and for their fare,  
Each evening in a silent shade,  
Bestow a gratefull serenade.

Thus ev'n tyerd with delight,  
Sated in soul and appetite;  
Full of the purple Plumme and Peare,  
The golden Apple, with the faire  
Grape that mirth fain would have taught her,  
And nuts, which squirrells cracking brought her;  
She softly layes her weary limbs,  
Whilst gentle slumber now beginnes  
To draw the curtaines of her eye;  
When straight awakend with a crie  
And bitter groan, again reposes,  
Again a deep sigh interposes.  
And now she heares a trembling voyce:  
Ah! can there ought on earth rejoyce!  
Why weares she this gay livery,  
Not black as her dark entrails be?  
Can trees be green, and to the ay'r  
Thus prostitute their flowing hayr?  
Why do they sprout, not witherd dy?  
Must each thing live, save wretched I?  
Can dayes triumph in blew and red,  
When both their light and life is fled?  
Fly Joy on wings of Popinjayes  
To courts of fools, where<33.12> as your playes  
Dye laught at and forgot; whilst all  
That's good mourns at this funerall.  
Weep, all ye Graces, and you sweet  
Quire, that at the hill inspir'd meet:  
Love, put thy tapers out, that we  
And th' world may seem as blind as thee;  
And be, since she is lost (ah wound!)  
Not Heav'n it self by any found.

Now as a prisoner new cast,<33.13>  
Who sleepes in chaines that night, his last,  
Next morn is wak't with a repreeve,  
And from his trance, not dream bid live,  
Wonders (his sence not having scope)  
Who speaks, his friend or his false hope.

So Amarantha heard, but feare  
Dares not yet trust her tempting care;  
And as againe her arms oth' ground  
Spread pillows for her head, a sound  
More dismall makes a swift divorce,

And starts her thus:—Rage, rapine, force!  
Ye blew-flam'd daughters oth' abysse,  
Bring all your snakes, here let them hisse;  
Let not a leaf its freshnesse keep;  
Blast all their roots, and as you creepe,  
And leave behind your deadly slime,  
Poyson the budding branch in's prime:  
Wast the proud bowers of this grove,  
That fiends may dwell in it, and move  
As in their proper hell, whilst she  
Above laments this tragedy:  
Yet pities not our fate; oh faire  
Vow-breaker, now betroth'd to th' ay'r!  
Why by those lawes did we not die,  
As live but one, Lucasta! why—  
As he Lucasta nam'd, a groan  
Strangles the fainting passing tone;  
But as she heard, Lucasta smiles,  
Posses<33.14> her round; she's slipt mean whiles  
Behind the blind of a thick bush,  
When, each word temp'ring with a blush,  
She gently thus bespake; Sad swaine,  
If mates in woe do ease our pain,  
Here's one full of that antick grief,  
Which stifled would for ever live,  
But told, expires; pray then, reveale  
(To show our wound is half to heale),  
What mortall nymph or deity  
Bewail you thus? Who ere you be,  
The shepheard sigh't,<33.15> my woes I crave  
Smotherd in me, me<33.16> in my grave;  
Yet be in show or truth a saint,  
Or fiend, breath anthemes, heare my plaint,  
For her and thy breath's symphony,  
Which now makes full the harmony  
Above, and to whose voice the spheres  
Listen, and call her musick theirs;  
This was I blest on earth with, so  
As Druids amorous did grow,  
Jealous of both: for as one day  
This star, as yet but set in clay,  
By an imbracing river lay,  
They steeped her in the hollowed brooke,  
Which from her humane nature tooke,  
And straight to heaven with winged feare,<33.17>  
Thus, ravisht with her, ravish her.

The nymph reply'd: This holy rape  
Became the gods, whose obscure shape  
They cloth'd with light, whilst ill you grieve  
Your better life should ever live,  
And weep that she, to whom you wish  
What heav'n could give, has all its blisse.  
Calling her angell here, yet be  
Sad at this true divinity:  
She's for the altar, not the skies,  
Whom first you crowne, then sacrifice.

Fond man thus to a precipice  
Aspires, till at the top his eyes  
Have lost the safety of the plain,  
Then begs of Fate the vales againe.

The now confounded shepheard cries:  
Ye all-confounding destines!  
How did you make that voice so sweet  
Without that glorious form to it?

Thou sacred spirit of my deare,  
Where e're thou hoverst o're us, hear!  
Imbark thee in the lawrell tree,  
And a new Phebus follows thee,  
Who, 'stead of all his burning rayes,  
Will strive to catch thee with his layes;  
Or, if within the Orient Vine,  
Thou art both deity and wine;  
But if thou takest the mirtle grove,  
That Paphos is, thou, Queene of Love,  
And I, thy swain who (else) must die,  
By no beasts, but thy cruelty:  
But you are rougher than the winde.  
Are souls on earth then heav'n<33.18> more kind?

Imprisoned in mortality  
Lucasta would have answered me.  
Lucasta, Amarantha said,  
Is she that virgin-star? a maid,  
Except her prouder livery,  
In beauty poore, and cheap as I;  
Whose glory like a meteor shone,  
Or aery apparition,  
Admir'd a while, but slighted known.

Fierce, as the chafed lyon hies,  
He rowses him, and to her flies,  
Thinking to answer with his speare——

Now, as in warre intestine where,  
Ith' mist of a black battell, each  
Layes at his next, then makes a breach  
Through th' entrayles of another, whom  
He sees nor knows whence he did come,  
Guided alone by rage and th' drumme,  
But stripping and impatient wild,  
He finds too soon his onely child.

So our expiring desp'rate lover  
Far'd when, amaz'd, he did discover  
Lucasta in this nymph; his sinne  
Darts the accursed javelin  
'Gainst his own breast, which she puts by  
With a soft lip and gentle eye,  
Then closes with him on the ground  
And now her smiles have heal'd his wound.

Alexis too again is found;  
But not untill those heavy crimes  
She hath kis'd off a thousand times,  
Who not contented with this pain,  
Doth threaten to offend again.

And now they gaze, and sigh, and weep,  
Whilst each cheek doth the other's steep,  
Whilst tongues, as exorcis'd, are calm;  
Onely the rhet'rick of the palm  
Prevailing pleads, untill at last  
They[re] chain'd in one another fast.

Lucasta to him doth relate  
Her various chance and diffring fate:  
How chac'd by Hydraphil, and tract  
The num'rous foe to Philanact,  
Who whilst they for the same things fight,  
As Bards decrees and Druids rite,  
For safeguard of their proper joyes  
And shepheards freedome, each destroyes  
The glory of this Sicilie;  
Since seeking thus the remedie,  
They fancy (building on false ground)

The means must them and it confound,  
Yet are resolved to stand or fall,  
And win a little, or lose all.

From this sad storm of fire and blood  
She fled to this yet living wood;  
Where she 'mongst savage beasts doth find  
Her self more safe then humane<33.19> kind.

Then she relates, how Caelia—<33.20>  
The lady—here strippes her array,  
And girdles her in home-spunne bayes  
Then makes her conversant in layes  
Of birds, and swaines more innocent,  
That kenne not guile [n]or courtship ment.

Now walks she to her bow'r to dine  
Under a shade of Eglantine,  
Upon a dish of Natures cheere  
Which both grew, drest and serv'd up there:  
That done, she feasts her smell with po'ses  
Pluckt from the damask cloath of Roses.  
Which there continually doth stay,  
And onely frost can take away;  
Then wagers which hath most content  
Her eye, eare, hand, her gust or sent.

Intranc't Alexis sees and heares,  
As walking above all the spheres:  
Knows and adores this, and is wilde,<33.21>  
Untill with her he live thus milde.<33.22>  
So that, which to his thoughts he meant  
For losse of her a punishment,  
His armes hung up and his sword broke,  
His ensignes folded, he betook  
Himself unto the humble crook.  
And for a full reward of all,  
She now doth him her shepheard call,  
And in a see of flow'rs install:  
Then gives her faith immediately,  
Which he returns religiously;  
Both vowing in her peacefull cave  
To make their bridall-bed and grave.

But the true joy this pair conceiv'd,  
Each from the other first bereav'd,  
And then found, after such alarmes,  
Fast-pinion'd in each other's armes,  
Ye panting virgins, that do meet  
Your loves within their winding sheet,  
Breathing and constant still ev'n there;  
Or souls their bodies in yon' sphere,  
Or angels, men return'd from hell  
And separated mindes—can tell.

<33.1> The punctuation of this piece is in the original edition singularly corrupt. I have found it necessary to amend it throughout.

<33.2> The marigold.

<33.3> A flower so called.

<33.4> More commonly known as THE GILLIFLOWER.

<33.5> i.e. the lady gathers the flowers, and binds them in her hair with a silken fillet, making of them a kind of chaplet or crown.

<33.6> i.e. silvery or white milk.

<33.7> An uncommon word, signifying WRINKLED. Bishop Hall seems to be, with the exception of Lovelace, almost the only writer who used it. Compare, however, the following passage:—



"Like to a WRITHEL'D Carion I have seen  
(Instead of fifty, write her down fifteen)  
Wearing her bought complexion in a box,  
And ev'ry morn her closet-face unlocks."

PLANTAGENET'S TRAGICALL STORY, by T. W. 1649, p. 105.

<33.8> Original has PRIZE THEIR.

<33.9> The fish with their silvery scales.

<33.10> Fins.

<33.11> Original reads BUT LOOK.

<33.12> Original has THERE.

<33.13> i.e. condemned.

<33.14> This word does not appear to have any very exact meaning.  
See Halliwell's DICTIONARY OF ARCHAIC WORDS, art. POSSE, and  
Worcester's Dict. IBID, &c. The context here requires TO TURN  
SHARPLY OR QUICKLY.

<33.15> Original has SIGHT.

<33.16> Original reads I. The meaning seems to be, "I crave that my woes may be smothered in me,  
and I may be smothered in my grave."

<33.17> Reverence.

<33.18> i.e. in heaven.

<33.19> i.e. than among human kind.

<33.20> It may be presumed that LUCASTA had adopted the name of CAELIA during her sylvan  
retreat.

<33.21> Impatient.

<33.22> Tranquil or secluded.

TO ELLINDA, THAT LATELY I HAVE NOT WRITTEN.

I.

If in me anger, or disdaine  
In you, or both, made me refraine  
From th' noble intercourse of verse,  
That only vertuous thoughts rehearse;  
Then, chaste Ellinda, might you feare  
The sacred vowes that I did sweare.

II.

But if alone some pious thought  
Me to an inward sadnesse brought,  
Thinking to breath your soule too welle,  
My tongue was charmed with that spell;  
And left it (since there was no roome  
To voyce your worth enough) strooke dumbe.

III.

So then this silence doth reveal  
No thought of negligence, but zeal:  
For, as in adoration,  
This is love's true devotion;  
Children and fools the words repeat,  
But anch'rites pray in tears and sweat.

## ELLINDA'S GLOVE. SONNET.

### I.

Thou snowy farme with thy five tenements!<34.1>  
Tell thy white mistris here was one,  
That call'd to pay his dayly rents;  
But she a-gathering flowr's and hearts is gone,  
And thou left voyd to rude possession.

### II.

But grieve not, pretty Ermin cabinet,  
Thy alabaster lady will come home;  
If not, what tenant can there fit  
The slender turnings of thy narrow roome,  
But must ejected be by his owne dombe?<34.2>

### III.

Then give me leave to leave my rent with thee:  
Five kisses, one unto a place:  
For though the lute's too high for me,  
Yet servants, knowing minikin<34.3> nor base,  
Are still allow'd to fiddle with the case.

<34.1> i.e. the white glove of the lady with its five fingers.

<34.2> Doom.

<34.3> A description of musical pin attached to a lute. It was only brought into play by accomplished musicians. In the address of "The Country Suiter to his Love," printed in Cotgrave's WITS INTERPRETER, 1662, p. 119, the man says:—

"Fair Wench! I cannot court thy sprightly eyes  
With a base-viol plac'd betwixt my thighs,  
I cannot lisp, nor to a fiddle sing,  
Nor run upon a high-strecht minikin."

In Middleton's FAMILIE OF LOVE, 1608 (Works by Dyce, ii. 127) there is the following passage:—

"GUDGEON. Ay, and to all that forswear marriage, and can be  
content with other men's wives.  
GERARDINE. Of which consort you two are grounds; one touches  
the bass, and the other tickles the minikin."

## BEING TREATED. TO ELLINDA.

For cherries plenty, and for corans  
Enough for fifty, were there more on's;  
For elles of beere,<35.1> flutes<35.2> of canary,  
That well did wash downe pasties-Mary;<35.3>  
For peason, chickens, sawces high,  
Pig, and the widdow-venson-pye;<35.4>  
With certaine promise (to your brother)  
Of the virginity of another,  
Where it is thought I too may peepe in  
With knuckles far as any deepe in;<35.5>  
For glasses, heads, hands, bellies full  
Of wine, and loyne right-worshipfull;<35.6>  
Whether all of, or more behind—a  
Thankes freest, freshest, faire Ellinda.  
Thankes for my visit not disdainig,  
Or at the least thankes for your feigning;  
For if your mercy doore were lockt-well,  
I should be justly soundly knockt-well;  
Cause that in dogrell I did mutter  
Not one rhyme to you from dam-Rotter.<35.7>

Next beg I to present my duty  
To pregnant sister in prime beauty,  
Whom well I deeme (e're few months elder)  
Will take out Hans from pretty Kelder,  
And to the sweetly fayre Mabella,  
A match that vies with Arabella;  
In each respect but the misfortune,  
Fortune, Fate, I thee importune.

Nor must I passe the lovely Alice,  
Whose health I'd quaffe in golden chalice;  
But since that Fate hath made me neuter,  
I only can in beaker pewter:  
But who'd forget, or yet left un-sung  
The doughty acts of George the yong-son?  
Who yesterday to save his sister  
Had slaine the snake, had he not mist her:  
But I shall leave him, 'till a nag on  
He gets to prosecute the dragon;  
And then with helpe of sun and taper,  
Fill with his deeds twelve reames of paper,  
That Amadis, <35.8> Sir Guy, and Topaz  
With his fleet neigher shall keep no-pace.  
But now to close all I must switch-hard,  
[Your] servant ever;

LOVELACE RICHARD.

<35.1> This expression has reference to the old practice of drinking beer and wine out of very high glasses, with divisions marked on them. A yard of ale is even now a well understood term: nor is the custom itself out of date, since in some parts of the country one is asked to take, not a glass, but A YARD. The ell was of course, strictly speaking, a larger measure than a yard; but it was often employed as a mere synonyme or equivalent. Thus, in MAROCCUS EXTATICUS, 1595, Bankes says:— "Measure, Marocco, nay, nay, they that take up commodities make no difference for measure between a Flemish elle and an English yard."

<35.2> In the new edition of Nares (1859), this very passage is quoted to illustrate the meaning of the word, which is defined rather vaguely to be A CASK. Obviously the word signifies something of the kind, but the explanation does not at all satisfy me. I suspect that a flute OF CANARY was so called from the cask having several vent-holes, in the same way that the French call a lamprey FLEUTE D'ALEMAN from the fish having little holes in the upper part of its body.

<35.3> Forsyth, in his ANTIQUARY'S PORTFOLIO, 1825, mentions certain "glutton-feasts," which used formerly to be celebrated periodically in honour of the Virgin; perhaps the pasties used on these occasions were thence christened PASTIES-MARY.

<35.4> Venison pies or pasties were the most favourite dish in this country in former times; innumerable illustrations might be furnished of the high esteem in which this description of viand was held by our ancestors, who regarded it as a thoroughly English luxury. The anonymous author of HORAE SUBSECIVAE, 1620, p. 38 (this volume is supposed to have been written by Giles Brydges, Lord Chandos), describes an affected Englishman who has been travelling on the Continent, as "sweating at the sight of a pasty of venison," and as "swearing that the only delicacies be mushrooms, or CAVIARE, or snyales."

"The full-cram'd dishes made the table crack,  
Gammons of bacon, brawn, and what was chief,  
King in all feasts, a tall Sir Loyne of BEEF,  
Fat venison pasties smoaking, 'tis no fable,  
Swans in their broath came swimming to the table."—  
Poems of Ben Johnson Junior, by W. S. 1672, p. 3.

<35.5> An allusion to the scantiness of forks. "And when your justice of peace is knuckle-deep in goose, you may without disparagement to your blood, though you have a lady to your mother, fall very manfully to your woodcocks."— Decker's GULS HORN BOOK, 1609, ed. Nott, p. 121.

"Hodge. Forks! what be they?  
Mar. The laudable use of forks,  
Brought into custom here, as they are in Italy,

To the sparing of napkins—"  
Jonson's THE DEVIL IS AN ASS, act. v. scene 4.

"Lovell. Your hand, good sir.

Greedy. This is a lord, and some think this a favour;  
But I had rather have my hand in my dumpling."  
Massinger's NEW WAY TO PAY OLD DEBTS, 1633.

<35.6> The sirloin of beef.

<35.7> Rotterdam.

<35.8> AMADIS DE GAULE. The translation of this romance by Anthony Munday and two or three others, whose assistance he obtained, made it popular in England, although, perhaps with the exception of the portion executed by Munday himself, the performance is beneath criticism.

## TO ELLINDA. VPON HIS LATE RECOVERY. A PARADOX.

### I.

How I grieve that I am well!  
All my health was in my sicknes,  
Go then, Destiny, and tell,  
Very death is in this quicknes.

### II.

Such a fate rules over me,  
That I glory when I languish,  
And do blesse the remedy,  
That doth feed, not quench my anguish.

### III.

'Twas a gentle warmth that ceas'd  
In the vizard of a feavor;  
But I feare now I am eas'd  
All the flames, since I must leave her.

### IV.

Joyes, though witherd, circled me,  
When unto her voice inured  
Like those who, by harmony,  
Only can be throughly cured.

### V.

Sweet, sure, was that malady,  
Whilst the pleasant angel hover'd,  
Which ceasing they are all, as I,  
Angry that they are recover'd.

### VI.

And as men in hospitals,  
That are maim'd, are lodg'd and dined;  
But when once their danger fals,  
Ah th' are healed to be pined!

### VII.

Fainting so, I might before  
Sometime have the leave to hand her,  
But lusty, am beat out of dore,  
And for Love compell'd to wander.

## TO CHLOE, COURTING HER FOR HIS FRIEND.

### I.

Chloe, behold! againe I bowe:

Againe possessest, againe I woe;  
From my heat hath taken fire  
Damas, noble youth, and fries, <36.1>  
Gazing with one of mine eyes,  
Damas, halfe of me expires:  
Chloe, behold! Our fate's the same.  
Or make me cinders too, or quench his flame

II.

I'd not be King, unlesse there sate  
Lesse lords that shar'd with me in state  
Who, by their cheaper coronets, know,  
What glories from my diadem flow:  
Its use and rate <36.2> values the gem:  
Pearles in their shells have no esteem;  
And, I being sun within thy sphere,  
'Tis my chiefe beauty thinner lights shine there.

III.

The Us'rer heaps unto his store  
By seeing others praise it more;  
Who not for gaine or want doth covet,  
But, 'cause another loves, doth love it:  
Thus gluttons cloy'd afresh invite  
Their gusts from some new appetite;  
And after cloth remov'd, and meate,  
Fall too againe by seeing others eate.

<36.1> This is not unfrequently used in old writers in the sense of BURN:—

"But Lucilla, who now began to frie in the flames of love, all the company being departed," &c.—  
Lyly's EUPHUES, 1579, sig. c v. verso.

"My lady-mistresse cast an amourous eye  
Upon my forme, which her affections drew,  
Shee was Love's martyr, and in flames did frye."  
EGYPT'S FAVORITE. THE HISTORIE OF JOSEPH.  
By Sir F. Hubert, 1631, sig. C.

<36.2> The estimation in which it is held, its marketable worth.

## GRATIANA DAUNCING AND SINGING.

I.

See! with what constant motion  
Even and glorious, as the sunne,  
Gratiana steeres that noble frame,  
Soft as her breast, sweet as her voyce,  
That gave each winding law and poyze,  
And swifter then the wings of Fame.

II.

She beat the happy pavement  
By such a starre-made firmament,  
Which now no more the rooffe envies;  
But swells up high with Atlas ev'n,  
Bearing the brighter, nobler Heav'n,  
And in her, all the Dieties.

III.

Each step trod out a lovers thought  
And the ambitious hopes he brought,  
Chain'd to her brave feet with such arts,  
Such sweet command and gentle awe,  
As when she ceas'd, we sighing saw

The floore lay pav'd with broken hearts.

IV.

So did she move: so did she sing:  
Like the harmonious spheres that bring  
Unto their rounds their musick's ayd;  
Which she performed such a way,  
As all th' inamour'd world will say:  
The Graces daunced, and Apollo play'd.

AMYNTOR'S GROVE, <37.1>  
HIS CHLORIS, ARIGO, <37.2> AND GRATIANA.  
AN ELOGIE.

It was <37.3> Amyntor's Grove, that Chloris  
For ever ecchoes, and her glories;  
Chloris, the gentlest sheapherdesse,  
That ever lawnes and lambes did blesse;  
Her breath, like to the whispering winde,  
Was calme as thought, sweet as her minde;  
Her lips like coral gates kept in  
The perfume and <37.4> the pearle within;  
Her eyes a double-flaming torch  
That alwayes shine, and never scorch;  
Her <37.5> selfe the Heav'n in which did meet  
The all of bright, of faire and sweet.  
Here was I brought with that delight  
That seperated soules take flight;  
And when my reason call'd my sence  
Back somewhat from this excellence,  
That I could see, I did begin  
T' observe the curious ordering  
Of every roome, where 'ts hard to know,  
Which most excels in sent or show.  
Arabian gummes do breathe here forth,  
And th' East's come over to the North;  
The windes have brought their hyre <37.6> of sweet  
To see Amyntor Chloris greet;  
Balme and nard, and each perfume,  
To blesse this payre, <37.7> chafe and consume;  
And th' Phoenix, see! already fries!  
Her neast a fire in Chloris <37.8> eyes!  
Next <37.9> the great and powerful hand  
Beckens my thoughts unto a stand  
Of Titian, Raphael, Georgone  
Whose art even Nature hath out-done;  
For if weake Nature only can  
Intend, not perfect, what is man,  
These certainly we must prefer,  
Who mended what she wrought, and her;  
And sure the shadowes of those rare  
And kind incomparable fayre  
Are livelier, nobler company,  
Then if they could or speake, or see:  
For these <37.10> I aske without a tush,  
Can kisse or touch without a blush,  
And we are taught that substance is,  
If uninjoy'd, but th' <37.11> shade of blisse.  
Now every saint cleerly divine,  
Is clos'd so in her severall shrine;  
The gems so rarely, richly set,  
For them wee love the cabinet;  
So intricately plac't withall,  
As if th' imbrordered the wall,

So that the pictures seem'd to be  
 But one continued tapistrie.<37.12>  
 After this travell of mine eyes  
 We sate, and pitied Dieties;  
 Wee bound our loose hayre with the vine,  
 The poppy, and the eglantine;  
 One swell'd an oriental bowle  
 Full, as a grateful, loyal soule  
 To Chloris! Chloris! Heare, oh, heare!  
 'Tis pledg'd above in ev'ry sphere.  
 Now streight the Indians richest prize  
 Is kindled in<37.13> glad sacrifice;  
 Cloudes are sent up on wings of thyme,  
 Amber, pomgranates, jessemine,  
 And through our earthen conduits sore  
 Higher then altars fum'd before.  
 So drencht we our oppressing cares,  
 And choakt the wide jawes of our feares.  
 Whilst ravisht thus we did devise,  
 If this were not a Paradice  
 In all, except these harmlesse sins:  
 Behold! flew in two cherubins,  
 Cleare as the skye from whence they came,  
 And brighter than the sacred flame;  
 The boy adorn'd with modesty,  
 Yet armed so with majesty,  
 That if the Thunderer againe  
 His eagle sends, she stoops in vaine.<37.14>  
 Besides his innocence he tooke  
 A sword and casket, and did looke  
 Like Love in armes; he wrote but five,  
 Yet spake eighteene; each grace did strive,  
 And twenty Cupids thronged forth,  
 Who first should shew his prettier worth.  
 But oh, the Nymph! Did you ere know  
 Carnation mingled with snow?<37.15>  
 Or have you seene the lightning shrowd,  
 And straight breake through th' opposing cloud?  
 So ran her blood; such was its hue;  
 So through her vayle her bright haire flew,  
 And yet its glory did appeare  
 But thinne, because her eyes were neere.  
 Blooming boy, and blossoming mayd,  
 May your faire sprigges be neere betray'd  
 To<37.16> eating worme or fouler storme;  
 No serpent lurke to do them harme;  
 No sharpe frost cut, no North-winde teare,  
 The verdure of that fragrant hayre;  
 But<37.17> may the sun and gentle weather,  
 When you are both growne ripe together,  
 Load you with fruit, such as your Father  
 From you with all the joyes doth gather:  
 And may you, when one branch is dead,  
 Graft such another in its stead,  
 Lasting thus ever in your prime,  
 'Till th' sithe is snatcht away from Time.<37.18>

<37.1> In the MS. copy this poem exhibits considerable variations, and is entitled "Gratiana's Eulogy."

<37.2> ARIGO or ARRIGO is the Venetian form of HENRICO. I have no means of identifying CHLORIS or GRATIANA; but AMYNTOR was probably, as I have already suggested, Endymion Porter, and ARIGO was unquestionably no other than Henry Jermyn, or Jarmin, who, though no poet, was, like his friend Porter, a liberal and discerning patron of men of letters.

"Yet when thy noble choice appear'd, that by  
Their combat first prepar'd thy victory:  
ENDYMION and ARIGO, who delight  
In numbers—"

Davenant's MADAGASCAR, 1638 (Works, 1673, p. 212).

See also p. 247 of Davenant's Works.

Jermyn's name is associated with that of Porter in the noblest dedication in our language, that to DAVENANT'S POEMS, 1638, 12mo. "If these poems live," &c.

<37.3> This and the five next lines are not in MS. which opens with "Her lips," &c.

<37.4> So original; MS. reads OF.

<37.5> This and the next thirteen lines are not in MS.

<<37.6>> i.e. tribute.

<37.7> FAIRE—MS.

<37.8> HER FAIRE—MS. The story of the phoenix was very popular, and the allusions to it in the early writers are almost innumerable.

"My labour did to greater things aspire,  
To find a PHOENIX melted in the fire,  
Out of whose ashes should spring up to birth  
A friend"—

POEMS OF Ben Johnson jun., by W. S., 1672, p. 18.

<37.9> This and the next eleven lines are not in MS.

<37.10> The MS. reads SHE.

<37.11> The MS. reads for BUT TH' "the."

<37.12> In the houses of such as could afford the expense, the walls of rooms were formerly lined with tapestry instead of paper.

<37.13> So MS.; original has A.

<37.14> An allusion to the fable of Jupiter and Ganymede.

<37.15> MIX'D WITH DROPPINGE SNOW—MS.

<37.16> This and the succeeding line are not in MS.

<37.17> This and the six following lines are not in MS.

<37.18> Here we have a figure, which reminds us of Jonson's famous lines on the Countess of Pembroke; but certainly in this instance the palm of superiority is due to Lovelace, whose conception of Time having his scythe snatched from him is bolder and finer than that of the earlier and greater poet.

#### THE SCRUTINIE.

#### SONG.

SET BY MR. THOMAS CHARLES. <38.1>

#### I.

Why shouldst thou <38.2> sweare I am forsworn,  
Since thine I vow'd to be?  
Lady, it is already Morn,  
And 'twas last night I swore to thee  
That fond impossibility.

#### II.

Have I not lov'd thee much and long,  
A tedious twelve moneths <38.3> space?  
I should <38.4> all other beauties wrong,  
And rob thee of a new imbrace;



Should<38.5> I still dote upon thy face.

III.

Not but all joy in thy browne haire  
In<38.6> others may be found;  
But I must search the black and faire,  
Like skilfulle minerallists that sound  
For treasure in un-plow'd-up<38.7> ground.

IV.

Then if, when I have lov'd my<38.8> round,  
Thou prov'st the pleasant she;  
With spoyles<38.9> of meaner beauties crown'd,  
I laden will returne to thee,  
Ev'n sated with varietie.

<38.1> This poem appears in WITS INTERPRETER, by John Cotgrave, ed. 1662, p. 214, under the title of "On his Mistresse, who unjustly taxed him of leaving her off."

<38.2> So Cotgrave. LUCASTA reads SHOULD YOU.

<38.3> So Cotgrave. This is preferable to HOURS, the reading in LUCASTA.

<38.4> So Cotgrave. LUCASTA reads MUST.

<38.5> So Cotgrave. LUCASTA has COULD.

<38.6> So Cotgrave. LUCASTA reads BY.

<38.7> UNBIDDEN—Cotgrave.

<38.8> THEE—Cotgrave.

<38.9> IN SPOIL—Cotgrave.

PRINCESSE LOYSA<39.1> DRAWING.

I saw a little Diety,  
MINERVA in epitomy,  
Whom VENUS, at first blush, surpris'd,  
Tooke for her winged wagge disguis'd.  
But viewing then, whereas she made  
Not a distrest, but lively shade  
Of ECCHO whom he had betrayd,  
Now wanton, and ith' coole oth' Sunne  
With her delight a hunting gone,  
And thousands more, whom he had slaine;  
To live and love, belov'd againe:  
Ah! this is true divinity!  
I will un-God that toye! cri'd she;  
Then markt she SYRINX running fast  
To Pan's imbraces, with the haste  
Shee fled him once, whose reede-pipe rent  
He finds now a new Instrument.  
THESEUS return'd invokes the Ayre  
And windes, then wafts his faire;  
Whilst ARIADNE ravish't stood  
Half in his armes, halfe in the flood.  
Proud ANAXERETE doth fall  
At IPHIS feete, who smiles at<39.2> all:  
And he (whilst she his curles doth deck)  
Hangs no where now, but on her neck.  
Here PHOEBUS with a beame untombes  
Long-hid LEUCOTHOE, and doomes  
Her father there; DAPHNE the faire  
Knowes now no bayes but round her haire;

And to APOLLO and his Sons,  
Who pay him their due Orisons,  
Bequeaths her lawrell-robe, that flame  
Contemnes, Thunder and evill Fame.

There kneel'd ADONIS fresh as spring,  
Gay as his youth, now offering  
Herself those joyes with voice and hand,  
Which first he could not understand.

Transfixed VENUS stood amas'd,  
Full of the Boy and Love, she gaz'd,  
And in imbraces seemed more  
Senseless and colde then he before.  
Uselesse Childe! In vaine (said she)  
You beare that fond artillerie;  
See heere a pow'r above the slow  
Weake execution of thy bow.

So said, she riv'd the wood in two,  
Unedged all his arrowes too,  
And with the string their feathers bound  
To that part, whence we have our wound.

See, see! the darts by which we burn'd  
Are bright Loysa's pencills turn'd,  
With which she now enliveth more  
Beauties, than they destroy'd before.

<39.1> Probably the second daughter of Frederic and Elizabeth of Bohemia, b. 1622. See Townend's DESCENDANTS OF THE STUARTS, 1858, p. 7.

<39.2> Original has OF.

A FORSAKEN LADY TO HER FALSE SERVANT  
THAT IS DISDAINED BY HIS NEW MISTRIS.<40.1>

Were it that you so shun me, 'cause you wish  
(Cruels't) a fellow in your wretchednesse,  
Or that you take some small ease in your owne  
Torments, to heare another sadly groane,  
I were most happy in my paines, to be  
So truely blest, to be so curst by thee:  
But oh! my cries to that doe rather adde,  
Of which too much already thou hast had,  
And thou art gladly sad to heare my moane;  
Yet sadly hearst me with derision.

Thou most unjust, that really dust know,  
And feelst thyselfe the flames I burne in. Oh!  
How can you beg to be set loose from that  
Consuming stake you binde another at?

Uncharitablest both wayes, to denie  
That pity me, for which yourself must dye,  
To love not her loves you, yet know the pain  
What 'tis to love, and not be lov'd againe.

Flye on, flye on, swift Racer, untill she  
Whom thou of all ador'st shall learne of thee  
The pace t'outfly thee, and shall teach thee groan,  
What terrour 'tis t'outgo and be outgon.

Nor yet looke back, nor yet must we  
Run then like spoakes in wheeles eternally,  
And never overtake? Be dragg'd on still  
By the weake cordage of your untwin'd will  
Round without hope of rest? No, I will turne,  
And with my goodnes boldly meete your scorne;

My goodnesse which Heav'n pardon, and that fate  
MADE YOU HATE LOVE, AND FALL IN LOVE WITH HATE.

But I am chang'd! Bright reason, that did give  
My soule a noble quicknes, made me live  
One breath yet longer, and to will, and see  
Hath reacht me pow'r to scorne as well as thee:  
That thou, which proudly tramplest on my grave,  
Thyselfe mightst fall, conquer'd my double slave:  
That thou mightst, sinking in thy triumphs, moan,  
And I triumph in my destruction.

Hayle, holy cold! chaste temper, hayle! the fire  
Rav'd<40.2> o're my purer thoughts I feel t' expire,  
And I am candied ice. Yee pow'rs! if e're  
I shall be forc't unto my sepulcher,  
Or violently hurl'd into my urne,  
Oh make me choose rather to freeze than burne.

<40.1> Carew (POEMS, ed. 1651, p. 53) has some lines, entitled, "In the person of a Lady to her Inconstant Servant," which are of nearly similar purport to Lovelace's poem, but are both shorter and better.

<40.2> RAV'D seems here to be equivalent to REAV'D, or BEREAV'D. Perhaps the correct reading may be "reav'd." See Worcester's DICTIONARY, art. RAVE, where Menage's supposition of affinity between RAVE and BEREAVE is perhaps a little too slightly treated.

#### THE GRASSEHOPPER.

TO MY NOBLE FRIEND, MR. CHARLES COTTON.<41.1>  
ODE.

##### I.

Oh thou, that swing'st upon the waving eare<41.2>  
Of some well-filled oaten beard,<41.3>  
Drunk ev'ry night with a delicious teare<41.4>  
Dropt thee from Heav'n, where now th'art reard.

##### II.

The joyes of earth and ayre are thine intire,  
That with thy feet and wings dost hop and flye;  
And when thy poppy workes, thou dost retire  
To thy carv'd acorn-bed to lye.

##### III.

Up with the day, the Sun thou welcomst then,  
Sportst in the guilt plats<41.5> of his beames,  
And all these merry dayes mak'st merry men,<41.6>  
Thy selfe, and melancholy streames.

##### IV.

But ah, the sickle! golden eares are cropt;  
CERES and BACCHUS bid good-night;  
Sharpe frosty fingers all your flowrs have topt,  
And what sithes spar'd, winds shave off quite.

##### V.

Poore verdant foole! and now green ice, thy joys  
Large and as lasting as thy peirch<41.7> of grasse,  
Bid us lay in 'gainst winter raine, and poize  
Their flouds with an o'erflowing glasse.

##### VI.

Thou best of men and friends? we will create  
A genuine summer in each others breast;  
And spite of this cold Time and frosen Fate,  
Thaw us a warme seate to our rest.

VII.

Our sacred harthes shall burne eternally  
As vestal flames; the North-wind, he  
Shall strike his frost-stretch'd winges, dissolve and flye  
This Aetna in epitome.

VIII.

Dropping December shall come weeping in,  
Bewayle th' usurping of his raigne;  
But when in show'rs of old Greeke<41.8> we beginne,  
Shall crie, he hath his crowne againe!

IX.

Night as cleare Hesper shall our tapers whip  
From the light casements, where we play,  
And the darke hagge from her black mantle strip,  
And sticke there everlasting day.

X.

Thus richer then untempted kings are we,  
That asking nothing, nothing need:  
Though lord of all what seas imbrace, yet he  
That wants himselfe, is poore indeed.

<41.1> Charles Cotton the elder, father of the poet. He died in 1658. This poem is extracted in CENSURA LITERARIA, ix. 352, as a favourable specimen of Lovelace's poetical genius. The text is manifestly corrupt, but I have endeavoured to amend it. In Elton's SPECIMENS OF CLASSIC POETS, 1814, i. 148, is a translation of Anacreon's Address to the Cicada, or Tree-Locust (Lovelace's grasshopper?), which is superior to the modern poem, being less prolix, and more natural in its manner. In all Lovelace's longer pieces there are too many obscure and feeble conceits, and too many evidences of a leaning to the metaphysical and antithetical school of poetry.

<41.2> Original has HAIRE.

<41.3> i.e. a beard of oats.

<41.4> Meleager's invocation to the tree-locust commences thus in Elton's translation:—

"Oh shrill-voiced insect! that with dew-drops sweet  
Inebriate——"

See also Cowley's ANACREONTIQUES, No. X. THE GRASSHOPPER.

<41.5> i.e. horizontal lines tinged with gold. See Halliwell's GLOSSARY OF ARCHAIC WORDS, 1860, art. PLAT (seventh and eighth meaning). The late editors of Nares cite this passage from LUCASTA as an illustration of GUILT-PLATS, which they define to be "plots of gold." This definition, unsupported by any other evidence, is not very satisfactory, and certainly it has no obvious application here.

<41.6> Randolph says:—

"——toiling ants perchance delight to hear  
The summer musique of the gras-hopper."  
POEMS, 1640, p. 90.

It is it question, perhaps, whether Lovelace intended by the GRASSHOPPER the CICADA or the LOCUSTA. See Sir Thomas Browne's INQUIRIES INTO VULGAR ERRORS (Works, by Wilkins, 1836, iii. 93).

<41.7> Perch.

<41.8> i.e. old Greek wine.

AN ELEGIE.

ON THE DEATH OF MRS. CASSANDRA COTTON,  
ONLY SISTER TO MR. C. COTTON.<42.1>

Hither with hallowed steps as is the ground,  
That must enshrine this saint with lookes profound,

And sad aspects as the dark vails you weare,  
Virgins opprest, draw gently, gently neare;  
Enter the dismall chancell of this roome,  
Where each pale guest stands fixt a living tombe;  
With trembling hands helpe to remove this earth  
To its last death and first victorious birth:  
Let gums and incense fume, who are at strife  
To enter th' hearse and breath in it new life;  
Mingle your steppes with flowers as you goe,  
Which, as they haste to fade, will speake your woe.

And when y' have plac't your tapers on her urn,  
How poor a tribute 'tis to weep and mourn!  
That flood the channell of your eye-lids fils,  
When you lose trifles, or what's lesse, your wills.  
If you'l be worthy of these obsequies,  
Be blind unto the world, and drop your eyes;  
Waste and consume, burn downward as this fire  
That's fed no more: so willingly expire;  
Passe through the cold and obscure narrow way,  
Then light your torches at the spring of day,  
There with her triumph in your victory.  
Such joy alone and such solemnity  
Becomes this funerall of virginity.

Or, if you faint to be so blest, oh heare!  
If not to dye, dare but to live like her:  
Dare to live virgins, till the honour'd age  
Of thrice fifteen cal's matrons on the stage,  
Whilst not a blemish or least staine is scene  
On your white roabe 'twixt fifty and fiteene;  
But as it in your swathing-bands was given,  
Bring't in your winding sheet unsoyl'd to Heav'n.  
Daere to do purely, without compact good,  
Or herald, by no one understood  
But him, who now in thanks bows either knee  
For th' early benefit and secresie.

Dare to affect a serious holy sorrow,  
To which delights of pallaces are narrow,  
And, lasting as their smiles, dig you a roome,  
Where practise the probation of your tombe  
With ever-bended knees and piercing pray'r,  
Smooth the rough passe through craggy earth to ay'r;  
Flame there as lights that shipwrackt mariners  
May put in safely, and secure their feares,  
Who, adding to your joyes, now owe you theirs.

Virgins, if thus you dare but courage take  
To follow her in life, else through this lake  
Of Nature wade, and breake her earthly bars,  
Y' are fixt with her upon a throne of stars,  
Arched with a pure Heav'n chrystaline,  
Where round you love and joy for ever shine.

But you are dumbe, as what you do lament  
More senseles then her very monument,  
Which at your weaknes weeps. Spare that vaine teare,  
Enough to burst the rev'rend sepulcher.  
Rise and walk home; there groaning prostrate fall,  
And celebrate your owne sad funerall:  
For howsoe're you move, may heare, or see,  
**YOU ARE MORE DEAD AND BURIED THEN SHEE.**

<42.1> Cassandra Cotton, only daughter of Sir George Cotton, of Warblenton, Co. Sussex, and of Bedhampton, co. Hants, died some time before 1649, unmarried. She was the sister of Charles Cotton

the elder, and aunt to the poet. See WALTON'S ANGLER, ed. Nicolas, Introduction, clxvi.

THE VINTAGE TO THE DUNGEON.  
A SONG.<43.1>  
SET BY MR. WILLIAM LAWES.

I.

Sing out, pent soules, sing cheerefully!  
Care shackles you in liberty:  
Mirth frees you in captivity.  
Would you double fetters adde?  
Else why so sadde?

Chorus.

Besides your pinion'd armes youl finde  
Griefe too can manakell the minde.

II.

Live then, pris'ners, uncontrol'd;  
Drink oth' strong, the rich, the old,  
Till wine too hath your wits in hold;  
Then if still your jollitie  
And throats are free—

Chorus.

Tryumph in your bonds and paines,  
And daunce to the music of your chaines.

<43.1> Probably composed during the poet's confinement in Peterhouse.

ON THE DEATH OF MRS. ELIZABETH FILMER.<44.1>  
AN ELEGIACALL EPITAPH.

You that shall live awhile, before  
Old time tyrs, and is no more:  
When that this ambitious stone  
Stoopest low as what it tramples on:  
Know that in that age, when sinne  
Gave the world law, and governd Queene,  
A virgin liv'd, that still put on  
White thoughts, though out of fashion:  
That trac't the stars, 'spite of report,  
And durst be good, though chidden for't:  
Of such a soule that infant Heav'n  
Repented what it thus had giv'n:  
For finding equall happy man,  
Th' impatient pow'rs snatch it agen.  
Thus, chaste as th' ayre whither shee's fled,  
She, making her celestiall bed  
In her warme alablaster, lay  
As cold is in this house of clay:  
Nor were the rooms unfit to feast  
Or circumscribe this angel-guest;  
The radiant gemme was brightly set  
In as divine a carkanet;  
Of<44.2> which the clearer was not knowne,  
Her minde or her complexion.  
Such an everlasting grace,  
Such a beatifick face,  
Incloysters here this narrow floore,  
That possest all hearts before.

Blest and bewayl'd in death and birth!  
The smiles and teares of heav'n and earth!

Virgins at each step are afeard,  
Filmer is shot by which they steer'd,  
Their star extinct, their beauty dead,  
That the yong world to honour led;  
But see! the rapid spheres stand still,  
And tune themselves unto her will.

Thus, although this marble must,  
As all things, crumble into dust,  
And though you finde this faire-built tombe  
Ashes, as what lyes in its wombe:  
Yet her saint-like name shall shine  
A living glory to this shrine,  
And her eternall fame be read,  
When all but VERY VERTUE'S DEAD.<44.3>

<44.1> This lady was perhaps the daughter of Edward Filmer, Esq., of East Sutton, co. Kent, by his wife Eliza, daughter of Richard Argall, Esq., of the same place (See Harl. MS. 1432, p. 300). Possibly, the Edward Filmer mentioned here was the same as the author of "Frenche Court Ayres, with their Ditties englished," 1629, in praise of which Jonson has some lines in his UNDERWOODS.

<44.2> Original reads FOR.

<44.3> "Which ensuing times shall warble,  
When 'tis lost, that's writ in marble."  
Wither's FAIR VIRTUE, THE MISTRESS OF PHILARETE, 1622.

Headley (SELECT BEAUTIES, ed. 1810, ii. p. 42) has remarked the similarity between these lines and some in Collins' DIRGE IN CYMBELINE:—

"Belov'd till life can charm no more;  
And MOURN'D TILL PITY'S SELF BE DEAD."

TO MY WORTHY FRIEND MR. PETER LILLY:<45.1>  
ON THAT EXCELLENT PICTURE OF HIS MAJESTY AND THE DUKE OF YORKE,  
DRAWNE BY HIM AT HAMPTON-COURT.

See! what a clouded majesty, and eyes  
Whose glory through their mist doth brighter rise!  
See! what an humble bravery doth shine,  
And grieffe triumphant breaking through each line,  
How it commands the face! so sweet a scorne  
Never did HAPPY MISERY adorne!  
So sacred a contempt, that others show  
To this, (oth' height of all the wheele) below,  
That mightiest monarchs by this shaded booke  
May copy out their proudest, richest looke.

Whilst the true eaglet this quick luster spies,  
And by his SUN'S enlightens his owne eyes;  
He cures<45.2> his cares, his burthen feeles, then streight  
Joyes that so lightly he can beare such weight;  
Whilst either eithers passion doth borrow,  
And both doe grieve the same victorious sorrow.

These, my best LILLY, with so bold a spirit  
And soft a grace, as if thou didst inherit  
For that time all their greatnesse, and didst draw  
With those brave eyes your royal sitters saw.

Not as of old, when a rough hand did speake  
A strong aspect, and a faire face, a weake;  
When only a black beard cried villaine, and  
By hieroglyphicks we could understand;  
When chrystall typified in a white spot,  
And the bright ruby was but one red blot;

Thou dost the things Orientally the same  
Not only paintst its colour, but its flame:  
Thou sorrow canst designe without a teare,  
And with the man his very hope or feare;  
So that th' amazed world shall henceforth finde  
None but my LILLY ever drew a MINDE.

<45.1> Mr., afterwards Sir Peter, Lely. He was frequently called Lilly, or Lilley, by his contemporaries, and Lilley is Pepys' spelling. "At Lord Northumberland's, at Sion, is a remarkable picture of King Charles I, holding a letter directed 'au roi monseigneur,' and the Duke of York, aet. 14, presenting a penknife to him to cut the strings. It was drawn at Hampton Court, when the King was last there, by Mr. Lely, who was earnestly recommended to him. I should have taken it for the hand of Fuller or Dobson. It is certainly very unlike Sir Peter's latter manner, and is stronger than his former. The King has none of the melancholy grace which Vandyck alone, of all his painters, always gave him. It has a sterner countenance, and expressive of the tempests he had experienced."—Walpole's ANECDOTES OF PAINTING IN ENGLAND, ed. 1862, p. 443-4.

<45.2> Original reads CARES.

THE LADY A. L. <46.1>  
MY ASYLUM IN A GREAT EXTREMITY.

With that delight the Royal captiv's <46.2> brought  
Before the throne, to breath his farewell thought,  
To tel his last tale, and so end with it,  
Which gladly he esteemes a benefit;  
When the brave victor, at his great soule dumbe,  
Findes something there fate cannot overcome,  
Cals the chain'd prince, and by his glory led,  
First reaches him his crowne, and then his head;  
Who ne're 'til now thinks himself slave and poor;  
For though nought else, he had himselfe before.  
He weepes at this faire chance, nor wil allow,  
But that the diadem doth brand his brow,  
And under-rates himselfe below mankinde,  
Who first had lost his body, now his minde,

With such a joy came I to heare my dombe,  
And haste the preparation of my tombe,  
When, like good angels who have heav'nly charge  
To steere and guide mans sudden giddy barge,  
She snatcht me from the rock I was upon,  
And landed me at life's pavillion:  
Where I, thus wound out of th' immense abysse,  
Was straight set on a pinnacle of blisse.

Let me leape in againe! and by that fall  
Bring me to my first woe, so cancel all:  
Ah! 's this a quitting of the debt you owe,  
To crush her and her goodnesse at one blowe?  
Defend me from so foule impiety,  
Would make friends grieve, and furies weep to see.

Now, ye sage spirits, which infuse in men  
That are oblidg'd twice to oblige agen,  
Informe my tongue in labour what to say,  
And in what coyne or language to repay.  
But you are silent as the ev'nings ayre,  
When windes unto their hollow grots repaire. <46.3>  
Oh, then accept the all that left me is,  
Devout oblations of a sacred wish!

When she walks forth, ye perfum'd wings oth' East,  
Fan her, 'til with the Sun she hastes to th' West,  
And when her heav'nly course calles up the day,



And breakes as bright, descend, some glistening ray,  
To circle her, and her as glistening haire,  
That all may say a living saint shines there.  
Slow Time, with woollen feet make thy soft pace,  
And leave no tracks ith' snow of her pure face;  
But when this vertue must needs fall, to rise  
The brightest constellation in the skies;  
When we in characters of fire shall reade,  
How cleere she was alive, how spotless, dead.  
All you that are a kinne to piety:  
For onely you can her close mourners be,  
Draw neer, and make of hallowed teares a dearth:  
Goodnes and justice both are fled the earth.

If this be to be thankful, I'v a heart  
Broaken with vowes, eaten with grateful smart,  
And beside this, the vild<46.4> world nothing hath  
Worth anything but her provoked wrath;  
So then, who thinkes to satisfie in time,  
Must give a satisfaction for that crime:  
Since she alone knowes the gifts value, she  
Can onely to her selfe requitall be,  
And worthyly to th' life paynt her owne story  
In its true colours and full native glory;  
Which when perhaps she shal be heard to tell,  
Buffoones and theeves, ceasing to do ill,  
Shal blush into a virgin-innocence,  
And then woo others from the same offence;  
The robber and the murderer, in 'spite  
Of his red spots, shal startle into white:  
All good (rewards layd by) shal stil increase  
For love of her, and villany decease;<46.5>  
Naught<46.6> be ignote, not so much out of feare  
Of being punisht, as offending her.

So that, when as my future daring bayes  
Shall bow it selfe<46.7> in lawrels to her praise,  
To crown her conqu'ring goodnes, and proclaime  
The due renowne and glories of her name:  
My wit shal be so wretched and so poore  
That, 'stead of praying, I shal scandal her,  
And leave, when with my purest art I'v done,  
Scarce the designe of what she is begunne:  
Yet men shal send me home, admir'd, exact;  
Proud, that I could from her so wel detract.

Where, then, thou bold instinct, shal I begin  
My endlesse taske? To thanke her were a sin  
Great as not speake, and not to speake, a blame  
Beyond what's worst, such as doth want a name;  
So thou my all, poore gratitude, ev'n thou  
In this wilt an unthankful office do:  
Or wilt I fling all at her feet I have:  
My life, my love, my very soule, a slave?  
Tye my free spirit onely unto her,  
And yeeld up my affection prisoner?  
Fond thought, in this thou teachest me to give  
What first was hers, since by her breath I live;  
And hast but show'd me, how I may resigne  
Possession of those thing are none of mine.

<46.1> i.e. Anne, Lady Lovelace, the poet's kinswoman, who seems to have assisted him in some emergency, unknown to us except through the present lines.

<46.2> Caractacus(?).

<46.3> The mythology of Greece assigned to each wind a separate cave, in which it was supposed to await the commands of its sovereign Aeolus, or Aeolos. It is to this myth that Lovelace alludes.

<46.4> A very common form of VILE among early writers.

<46.5> This reads like a parody on the fourth Eclogue of Virgil. The early English poets were rather partial to the introduction of miniature-pictures of the Golden Age on similar occasions to the present. Thus Carew, in his poem TO SAXHAM, says:—

"The Pheasant, Partridge, and the Lark  
Flew to thy house, as to the Ark.  
The willing Oxe of himself came  
Home to the slaughter with the Lamb.  
And every beast did thither bring  
Himself, to be an offering."  
Carew's POEMS, 1651, p. 34.

<46.6> Vice.

<46.7> We should read THEMSELVES.

## A LADY WITH A FALCON ON HER FIST. TO THE HONOURABLE MY COUSIN A[NNE] L[OVEFACE.]

### I.

This Queen of Prey (now prey to you),  
Fast to that pirsch of ivory  
In silver chaines and silken clue,  
Hath now made full thy victory:

### II.

The swelling admirall of the dread  
Cold deepe, burnt in thy flames, oh faire!  
Wast not enough, but thou must lead  
Bound, too, the Princesse of the aire?

### III.

Unarm'd of wings and scaly oare,  
Unhappy crawler on the land,  
To what heav'n fly'st? div'st to what shoare,  
That her brave eyes do not command?

### IV.

Ascend the chariot of the Sun  
From her bright pow'r to shelter thee:  
Her captive (foole) outgases him;  
Ah, what lost wretches then are we!

### V.

Now, proud usurpers on the right  
Of sacred beauty, heare your dombe;  
Recant your sex, your mastery, might;  
Lower you cannot be or'ecome:

### VI.

Repent, ye er'e nam'd he or head,  
For y' are in falcon's monarchy,  
And in that just dominion bred,  
In which the nobler is the shee.

## A PROLOGUE TO THE SCHOLARS.

A COMAEDY PRESENTED AT THE WHITE FRYERS. <47.1>

A gentleman, to give us somewhat new,  
Hath brought up OXFORD with him to show you;

Pray be not frighted—Tho the scaene and gown's  
The Universities, the wit's the town's;  
The lines each honest Englishman may speake:  
Yet not mistake his mother-tongue for Greeke,  
For stil 'twas part of his vow'd liturgie:—  
From learned comedies deliver me!  
Wishing all those that lov'd 'em here asleepe,  
Promising SCHOLARS, but no SCHOLARSHIP.

You'd smile to see, how he do's vex and shake,  
Speakes naught; but, if the PROLOGUE do's but take,  
Or the first act were past the pikes once, then—  
Then hopes and joys, then frowns and fears agen,  
Then blushes like a virgin, now to be  
Rob'd of his comicall virginity  
In presence of you all. In short, you'd say  
More hopes of mirth are in his looks then play.

These feares are for the noble and the wise;  
But if 'mongst you there are such fowle dead eyes,  
As can damne unaraign'd, cal law their pow'rs,  
Judging it sin enough that it is ours,  
And with the house shift their decreed desires,  
FAIRE still to th' BLACKKE, BLACKKE still to the WHITE-FRYERS;<47.2>  
He do's protest he wil sit down and weep  
Castles and pyramids . . .  
. . . . . No, he wil on,  
Proud to be rais'd by such destruction,  
So far from quarr'ling with himselfe and wit,  
That he wil thank them for the benefit,  
Since finding nothing worthy of their hate,  
They reach him that themselves must envy at:

<47.1> This was the theatre in Salisbury Court. See Collier, H. E. D. P. iii. 289, and Halliwell's DICTIONARY OF OLD PLAYS, art. SCHOLAR. From the terms of the epilogue it seems to have been a piece occupying two hours in the performance. Judging, I presume, from the opening lines, Mr. Halliwell supposes it to have been originally acted at Gloucester Hall. Probably Mr. Halliwell is right.

<47.2> A quibble on the two adjacent theatres in Whitefriars and Blackfriars.

## THE EPILOGUE.

The stubborne author of the trifle<48.1> crime,  
That just now cheated you of two hours' time,  
Presumptuous it lik't him,<48.2> began to grow  
Carelesse, whether it pleased you or no.

But we who ground th' excellence of a play  
On what the women at the dores wil say,  
Who judge it by the benches, and afford  
To take your money, ere his oath or word  
His SCHOLLARS school'd, sayd if he had been wise  
He should have wove in one two COMEDIES;  
The first for th' gallery, in which the throne  
To their amazement should descend alone,  
The rosin-lightning flash, and monster spire  
Squibs, and words hotter then his fire.

Th' other for the gentlemen oth' pit,  
Like to themselves, all spirit, fancy, wit,  
In which plots should be subtile as a flame,  
Disguises would make PROTEUS stil the same:  
Humours so rarely humour'd and exprest,  
That ev'n they should thinke 'em so, not drest;  
Vices acted and applauded too, times

Tickled, and th' actors acted, not their crimes,  
So he might equally applause have gain'd  
Of th' hardned, sooty, and the snowy hand.<48.3>

Where now one SO SO<48.4> spatters, t'other: no!  
Tis his first play; twere solecisme 'tshould goe;  
The next 't show'd pritily, but searcht within  
It appeares bare and bald, as is his chin;  
The towne-wit sentences: A SCHOLARS PLAY!  
Pish! I know not why, but th'ave not the way.<48.5>

We, whose gaine is all our pleasure, ev'n these  
Are bound by justice and religion to please;  
Which he, whose pleasure's all his gaine, goes by  
As slightly, as they doe his comaedy.

Culls out the few, the worthy, at whose feet  
He sacrifices both himselfe and it,  
His fancies first fruits: profit he knowes none,  
Unles that of your approbation,  
Which if your thoughts at going out will pay,  
Hee'l not looke farther for a second day.<48.6>

<48.1> Perhaps TRIFLING was the word written by Lovelace. A VENIAL OFFENCE is meant.

<48.2> It would be difficult to point out a writer so unpardonably slovenly in his style or phraseology as Lovelace. By "Presumptuous it lik't him," we must of course understand "Presumptuous that he liked it himself," or presumptuously self-satisfied.

<48.3> i.e. the rough and dirty occupants of the gallery and the fair spectators in the boxes.

<48.4> An exclamation of approval, when an actor made a hit. The phrase seems to be somewhat akin to the Italian "SI, SI," a corruption of "SIA, SIA."

<48.5> i.e. they do not know how to act a play.

<48.6> This prologue and epilogue were clearly not attached to the play when it was first performed by the fellow-collegians of the poet at Gloucester Hall, as an amateur attempt in the dramatic line, but were first added when "The Scholars" was reproduced in London, and the parts sustained by ordinary actors.

## AGAINST THE LOVE OF GREAT ONES.

Vnhappy youth, betrayd by Fate  
To such a love<49.1> hath sainted hate,  
And damned those celestiall bands<49.2>  
Are onely knit with equal hands;  
The love of great ones is a love,<49.3>  
Gods are incapable to prove:  
For where there is a joy uneven,  
There never, never can be Heav'n:  
'Tis such a love as is not sent  
To fiends as yet for punishment;  
IXION willingly doth feele  
The gyre of his eternal wheele,  
Nor would he now exchange his paine  
For cloudes and goddesses againe.

Wouldst thou with tempests lye? Then bow  
To th' rougher furrows of her brow,  
Or make a thunder-bolt thy choyce?  
Then catch at her more fatal voyce;  
Or 'gender with the lightning? trye  
The subtler<49.4> flashes of her eye:  
Poore SEMELE<49.5> wel knew the same,  
Who<49.6> both imbrac't her God and flame;

And not alone in soule did burne,  
But in this love did ashes turne.

How il doth majesty injoy  
The bow and gaity oth' boy,  
As if the purple-roabe should sit,  
And sentence give ith' chayr of wit.

Say, ever-dying wretch, to whom  
Each answer is a certaine doom,<49.7>  
What is it that you would possesse,  
The Countes, or the naked Besse?<49.8>  
Would you her gowne or title do?  
Her box or gem, the<49.9> thing or show?  
If you meane HER, the very HER,  
Abstracted from her carактер,  
Unhappy boy! you may as soone  
With fawning wanton with the Moone,  
Or with an amorous complaint  
Get prostitute your very saint;  
Not that we are not mortal, or  
Fly VENUS altars, and<49.10> abhor  
The selfesame knack, for which you pine;  
But we (defend us!) are divine,  
[Not] female, but madam born,<49.11> and come  
From a right-honourable wombe.  
Shal we then mingle with the base,  
And bring a silver-tinsell race?  
Whilst th' issue noble wil not passe  
The gold alloyd<49.12> (almost halfe brasse),  
And th' blood in each veine doth appeare,  
Part thick Booreinn, part Lady Cleare;  
Like to the sordid insects sprung  
From Father Sun and Mother Dung:  
Yet lose we not the hold we have,  
But faster graspe the trembling slave;  
Play at baloon with's heart, and winde  
The strings like scaines, steale into his minde  
Ten thousand false<49.13> and feigned joyes  
Far worse then they; whilst, like whipt boys,  
After this scourge hee's hush with toys.

This<49.14> heard, Sir, play stil in her eyes,  
And be a dying, live<49.15> like flyes  
Caught by their angle-legs, and whom  
The torch laughs peece-meale to consume.

<49.1> i.e. THAT hath sainted, &c.

<49.2> So the Editor's MS. copy already described; the printed copy has BONDS.

<49.3> So Editor's MS. Printed copy has—  
"The Love of Great Ones? 'Tis a Love."

<<49.4>> Subtle—Editor's MS.

<49.5> Semele she—Editor's MS.

<49.6> She—Ibid.

<49.7> Dombe—LUCASTA.

<49.8> BESS is used in the following passage as a phrase for a sort of female TOM-O-BEDLAM—

"We treat mad-Bedlams, TOMS and BESSSES,  
With ceremonies and caresses!"

Dixon's CANIDIA, 1683, part i. canto 2.

And the word seems also to have been employed to signify the loose women who, in early times, made Covent Garden and its neighbourhood their special haunt. See Cotgrave's WITS INTERPRETER, 1662, p. 236. But here "naked Besse," means only a woman who, in contradistinction to a lady of rank, has no adventitious qualities to recommend her.

<49.9> Original reads HER.

<49.10> Altars, or—LUCASTA.

<49.11> Borne—LUCASTA.

<49.12> Allay'd—LUCASTA.

<49.13> So Editor's MS. LUCASTA has HELLS.

<49.14> From this word down to LIVES is omitted in the MS. copy.

<49.15> Original has LIVES.

TO ALTHEA.  
FROM PRISON.  
SONG.  
SET BY DR. JOHN WILSON.<50.1>

I.

When love with unconfined wings  
Hovers within my gates;  
And my divine ALTHEA brings  
To whisper at the grates;  
When I lye tangled in her haire,<50.2>  
And fetterd to her eye,<50.3>  
The birds,<50.4> that wanton in the aire,  
Know no such liberty.

II.

When flowing cups run swiftly round  
With no allaying THAMES,  
Our carelesse heads with roses bound,  
Our hearts with loyal flames;  
When thirsty grieffe in wine we steepe,  
When healths and draughts go free,  
Fishes, that tipples in the deepe,  
Know no such libertie.

III.

When (like committed linnets<50.5>) I  
With shriller throat shall sing  
The sweetnes, mercy, majesty,  
And glories of my King.  
When I shall voyce aloud, how good  
He is, how great should be,  
Inlarged winds, that curle the flood,  
Know no such liberty.

IV.

Stone walls doe not a prison make,  
Nor iron bars a cage;  
Mindes innocent and quiet take  
That for an hermitage;  
If I have freedome in my love,  
And in my soule am free,  
Angels alone that sore above  
Enjoy such liberty.

<50.1> The first stanza of this famous song is harmonized in CHEERFULL AYRES OR BALLADS: FIRST COMPOSED FOR ONE SINGLE VOICE, AND SINCE SET FOR THREE VOICES. By John Wilson,

Dr. in Music, Professor of the same in the University of Oxford. Oxford, 1660 (Sept. 20, 1659), 4to. p. 10. I have sometimes thought that, when Lovelace composed this production, he had in his recollection some of the sentiments in Wither's SHEPHERDS HUNTING, 1615. See, more particularly, the sonnet (at p. 248 of Mr. Gutch's Bristol edition) commencing:—

"I that er'st while the world's sweet air did draw."

<50.2> Peele, in KING DAVID AND FAIR BETHSABE, 1599, has a similar figure, where David says:—

"Now comes my lover tripping like the roe,  
And brings my longings tangled in her hair."

The "lover" is of course Bethsabe.

<50.3> Thus Middleton, in his MORE DISSEMBLERS BESIDES WOMEN, printed in 1657, but written before 1626, says:—

"But for modesty,  
I should fall foul in words upon fond man,  
That can forget his excellence and honour,  
His serious meditations, being the end  
Of his creation, to learn well to die;  
And live a PRISONER TO A WOMAN'S EYE."

<50.4> Original reads GODS; the present word is substituted in accordance with a MS. copy of the song printed by the late Dr. Bliss, in his edition of Woods ATHENAE. If Dr. Bliss had been aware of the extraordinary corruptions under which the text of LUCASTA laboured, he would have had less hesitation in adopting BIRDS as the true reading. The "Song to Althea," is a favourable specimen of the class of composition to which it belongs; but I fear that it has been over-estimated.

<50.5> Percy very unnecessarily altered LIKE COMMITTED LINNETS to LINNET-LIKE CONFINED (Percy's RELIQUES, ii. 247; Moxon's ed.) Ellis (SPECIMENS OF EARLY ENGLISH POETS, ed. 1801, iii. 252) says that this latter reading is "more intelligible." It is not, however, either what Lovelace wrote, or what (it may be presumed) he intended to write, and nothing, it would seem, can be clearer than the passage as it stands, COMMITTED signifying, in fact, nothing more than CONFINED. It is fortunate for the lovers of early English literature that Bp. Percy had comparatively little to do with it. Emendation of a text is well enough; but the wholesale and arbitrary slaughter of it is quite another matter.

#### SONNET.

TO GENERALL GORING, <51.1> AFTER THE PACIFICATION AT BERWICKE.  
A LA CHABOT. <51.2>

##### I.

Now the peace is made at the foes rate, <51.3>  
Whilst men of armes to kettles their old helmes translate,  
And drinke in caskes of honourable plate.  
In ev'ry hand [let] a cup be found,  
That from all hearts a health may sound  
To GORING! to GORING! see 't goe round.

##### II.

He whose glories shine so brave and high,  
That captive they in triumph leade each care and eye,  
Claiming uncombated the victorie,  
And from the earth to heav'n rebound,  
Fixt there eternall as this round:  
To GORING! to GORING! see him crown'd.

##### III.

To his lovely bride, in love with scars,  
Whose eyes wound deepe in peace, as doth his sword in wars;  
They shortly must depose the Queen of Stars:  
Her cheekes the morning blushes give,  
And the benighted world repreeve;  
To LETTICE! to LETTICE! let her live.

IV.

Give me scorching heat, thy heat, dry Sun,  
That to this payre I may drinke off an ocean:  
Yet leave my grateful thirst unquensht, undone;  
Or a full bowle of heav'nly wine,  
In which dissolved stars should shine,  
To the couple! to the couple! th' are divine.

<51.1> Particulars of this celebrated man, afterward created Earl of Norwich, may be found in Eachard's HISTORY, Rushworth's COLLECTIONS, Whitelocke's MEMOIRS, Collins' PEERAGE by Brydges, Pepys' DIARY (i. 150, ed. 1858), and Peck's DESIDERATA CURIOSA, (ed. 1779, ii. 479). Whitelocke speaks very highly of his military character. In a poem called THE GALLANTS OF THE TIMES, printed in "Wit Restored," 1658, there is the following passage:—

"A great burgandine for WILL MURRAY'S sake  
GEORGE SYMONDS, he vows the first course to take:  
When STRADLING a Graecian dog let fly,  
Who took the bear by the nose immediately;  
To see them so forward Hugh Pollard did smile,  
Who had an old curr of Canary oyl,  
And held up his head that GEORGE GORING might see,  
Who then cryed aloud, TO MEE, BOYS, TO MEE!"

See, also, THE ANSWER:—

"GEORGE, Generall of Guenefrieds,  
He is a joviall lad,  
Though his heart and fortunes disagree  
Oft times to make him sad."

Consult Davenant's Works, 1673, p. 247, and FRAGMENTA AULICA, 1662, pp. 47, 54. Lord Goring died Jan. 6, 1663 (Smyth's OBITUARY, p. 57; Camden Soc.).

<51.2> A LA CHABOT was a French dance tune, christened after the admiral of that name, in the same manner as A LA BOURBON, mentioned elsewhere in LUCASTA, derived its title from another celebrated person. Those who have any acquaintance with the history of early English music need not to be informed that it was formerly the practice of our own composers to seek the patronage of the gentlemen and ladies about the Court for their works, and to identify their names with them. Thus we have "My Lady Carey's Dumpe," &c. &c.

<<51.3>> Expense.

## SIR THOMAS WORTLEY'S SONNET ANSWERED.

### [THE SONNET.

I.

No more  
Thou little winged archer, now no more  
As heretofore,  
Thou maist pretend within my breast to bide,  
No more,  
Since cruell Death of dearest LYNDAMORE  
Hath me depriv'd,  
I bid adieu to love, and all the world beside.

II.

Go, go;  
Lay by thy quiver and unbend thy bow  
Poore sillie foe,  
Thou spend'st thy shafts but at my breast in vain,  
Since Death  
My heart hath with a fatall icie deart  
Already slain,  
Thou canst not ever hope to warme her wound,



Or wound it o're againe.]

**THE ANSWER.**

I.

Againe,  
Thou witty cruell wanton, now againe,  
Through ev'ry veine,  
Hurle all your lightning, and strike ev'ry dart,  
Againe,  
Before I feele this pleasing, pleasing paine.  
I have no heart,  
Nor can I live but sweetly murder'd with  
So deare, so deare a smart.

II.

Then flye,  
And kindle all your torches at her eye,  
To make me dye  
Her martyr, and put on my roabe of flame:  
So I,  
Advanced on my blazing wings on high,  
In death became  
Inthroan'd a starre, and ornament unto  
Her glorious, glorious name.

**A GUILTLESSE LADY IMPRISONED: AFTER PENANCED. SONG. SET BY MR. WILLIAM LAWES.**

I.

Heark, faire one, how what e're here is  
Doth laugh and sing at thy distresse;  
Not out of hate to thy reliefe,  
But joy t' enjoy thee, though in grieve.

II.

See! that which chaynes you, you chaine here;  
The prison is thy prisoner;  
How much thy jaylor's keeper art!  
He bindes your hands, but you his heart.

III.

The gyves to rase so smooth a skin,  
Are so unto themselves within;  
But, blest to kisse so fayre an arme,  
Haste to be happy with that harme;

IV.

And play about thy wanton wrist,  
As if in them thou so wert drest;  
But if too rough, too hard they presse,  
Oh, they but closely, closely kisse.

V.

And as thy bare feet blesse the way,  
The people doe not mock, but pray,  
And call thee, as amas'd they run  
Instead of prostitute, a nun.

VI.

The merry torch burnes with desire  
To kindle the eternall fire,  
And lightly daunces in thine eyes  
To tunes of epithalamies.

VII.

The sheet's ty'd ever to thy wast,  
How thankfull to be so imbrac't!  
And see! thy very very bonds  
Are bound to thee, to binde such hands.

TO HIS DEARE BROTHER COLONEL F. L.  
IMMODERATELY MOURNING MY BROTHERS<52.1> UNTIMELY DEATH  
AT CARMARTHEN.

I.

If teares could wash the ill away,  
A pearle for each wet bead I'd pay;  
But as dew'd corne the fuller growes,  
So water'd eyes but swell our woes.

II.

One drop another cals, which still  
(Griefe adding fuell) doth distill;  
Too fruitfull of her selfe is anguish,  
We need no cherishing to languish.

III.

Coward fate degen'rate man  
Like little children uses, when  
He whips us first, untill we weepe,  
Then, 'cause we still a weeping keepe.

IV.

Then from thy firme selfe never swerve;  
Teares fat the griefe that they should sterue;  
Iron decrees of destinie  
Are ner'e wipe't out with a wet eye.

V.

But this way you may gaine the field,  
Oppose but sorrow, and 'twill yield;  
One gallant thorough-made resolve  
Doth starry influence dissolve.

<52.1> Thomas Lovelace. See MEMOIR. <see note 2.7>

TO A LADY THAT DESIRED ME I WOULD BEARE MY PART WITH HER IN A SONG.  
MADAM A. L.<53.1>

This is the prittiest motion:  
Madam, th' alarums of a drumme  
That cals your lord, set to your cries,  
To mine are sacred symphonies.

What, though 'tis said I have a voice;  
I know 'tis but that hollow noise  
Which (as it through my pipe doth speed)  
Bitterns do carol through a reed;  
In the same key with monkeys jiggs,  
Or dirges of proscribed piggs,  
Or the soft Serenades above  
In calme of night,<53.2> when<53.3> cats make<53.4> love.

Was ever such a consort seen!  
Fourscore and fourteen with fourteen?  
Yet<53.5> sooner they'l agree, one paire,  
Then we in our spring-winter aire;  
They may imbrace, sigh, kiss, the rest:

Our breath knows nought but east and west.  
Thus have I heard to childrens cries  
The faire nurse still such lullabies,  
That, well all sayd (for what there lay),  
The pleasure did the sorrow pay.

Sure ther's another way to save  
Your phansie,<53.6> madam; that's to have  
( 'Tis but a petitioning kinde fate)  
The organs sent to Bilingsgate,  
Where they to that soft murm'ring quire  
Shall teach<53.7> you all you can admire!  
Or do but heare, how love-bang Kate  
In pantry darke for freage of mate,  
With edge of steele the square wood shapes,  
And DIDO<53.8> to it chaunts or scrapes.  
The merry Phaeton oth' carre  
You'l vow makes a melodious jarre;  
Sweeter and sweeter whisleth He  
To un-anointed<53.9> axel-tree;  
Such swift notes he and 's wheels do run;  
For me, I yeeld him Phaebus son.

Say, faire Comandres, can it be  
You should ordaine a mutinie?  
For where I howle, all accents fall,  
As kings harangues, to one and all.<53.10>

Ulisses art is now withstood:<53.11>  
You ravish both with sweet and good;  
Saint Syren, sing, for I dare heare,  
But when I ope', oh, stop your eare.

Far lesse be't aemulation  
To passe me, or in trill or<53.12> tone,  
Like the thin throat of Philomel,  
And the<53.13> smart lute who should excell,  
As if her soft cords should begin,  
And strive for sweetnes with the pin.<53.14>

Yet can I musick too; but such  
As is beyond all voice or<53.15> touch;  
My minde can in faire order chime,  
Whilst my true heart still beats the time;  
My soule['s] so full of harmonie,  
That it with all parts can agree;  
If you winde up to the highest fret,<53.16>  
It shall descend an eight from it,  
And when you shall vouchsafe to fall,  
Sixteene above you it shall call,  
And yet, so dis-assenting one,  
They both shall meet in<53.17> unison.

Come then, bright cherubin, begin!  
My loudest musick is within.  
Take all notes with your skillfull eyes;  
Hearke, if mine do not sympathise!  
Sound all my thoughts, and see exprest  
The tablature<53.18> of my large brest;  
Then you'l admit, that I too can  
Musick above dead sounds of man;  
Such as alone doth blesse the spheres,  
Not to be reacht with humane eares.

<53.1> "Madam A. L." is not in MS. copy. "The Lady A. L." and "Madam A. L." may very probably be two different persons: for Carew in his Poems (edit. 1651, 8vo. p. 2) has a piece "To A. L.; Persuasions to Love," and it is possible that the A. L. of Carew, and the A. L. mentioned above, are identical. The

following poem is printed in Durfey's PILLS TO PURGE MELANCHOLY, v. 120, but whether it was written by Lovelace, and addressed to the same lady, whom he represents above as requesting him to join her in a song, or whether it was the production of another pen, I cannot at all decide. It is not particularly unlike the style of the author of LUCASTA. At all events, I am not aware that it has been appropriated by anybody else, and as I am reluctant to omit any piece which Lovelace is at all likely to have composed, I give these lines just as I find them in Durfey, where they are set to music:—

**"TO HIS FAIREST VALENTINE MRS. A. L.**

"Come, pretty birds, present your lays,  
And learn to chaunt a goddess praise;  
Ye wood-nymphs, let your voices be  
Employ'd to serve her deity:  
And warble forth, ye virgins nine,  
Some music to my Valentine.

"Her bosom is love's paradise,  
There is no heav'n but in her eyes;  
She's chaster than the turtle-dove,  
And fairer than the queen of love:  
Yet all perfections do combine  
To beautifie my Valentine.

"She's Nature's choicest cabinet,  
Where honour, beauty, worth and wit  
Are all united in her breast.  
The graces claim an interest:  
All virtues that are most divine  
Shine clearest in my Valentine."

<53.2> Nights—Editor's MS.

<53.3> Where—Ibid.

<53.4> Do—Ibid.

<53.5> There is here either an interpolation in the printed copy, or an HIATUS in the MS. The latter reads:—

"Yet may I 'mbrace, sigh, kisse, the rest," &c.,

thus leaving out a line and a half or upward of the poem, as it is printed in LUCASTA.

<53.6> MS. reads:—"Youre phansie, madam," omitting "that's to have."

<53.7> Original and MS. have REACH.

<53.8> This must refer, I suppose, to the ballad of Queen Dido, which the woman sings as she works. The signification of LOVE-BANG is not easily determined. BANG, in Suffolk, is a term applied to a particular kind of cheese; but I suspect that "love-bang Kate" merely signifies "noisy Kate" here. As to the old ballad of Dido, see Stafford Smith's MUSICA ANTIQUA, i. 10, ii. 158; and Collier's EXTRACTS FROM THE REGISTERS OF THE STATIONERS' COMPANY, i. 98. I subjoin the first stanza of "Dido" as printed in the MUSICA ANTIQUA:—

"Dido was the Carthage Queene,  
And lov'd the Troian knight,  
That wandring many coasts had seene,  
And many a dreadfull fight.  
As they a-hunting road, a show'r  
Drove them in a loving bower,  
Down to a darksome cave:  
Where Aeneas with his charmes  
Lock't Queene Dido in his armes  
And had what he would have."

A somewhat different version is given in Durfey's PILLS TO PURGE MELANCHOLY, vi. 192-3.

<53.9> AN UNANOYNTED—MS.

<53.10> This and the three preceding lines are not in MS.

<53.11> Alluding of course to the very familiar legend of Ulysses and the Syrens.

<53.12> A quaver (a well-known musical expression).

<53.13> A—MS.

<53.14> A musical peg.

<53.15> AND—MS.

<53.16> A piece of wire attached to the finger-board of a guitar.

<53.17> Original and MS. read AN.

<53.18> The tablature of Lovelace's time was the application of letters, of the alphabet or otherwise, to the purpose of expressing the sounds or notes of a composition.

## VALIANT LOVE.

### I.

Now fie upon that everlasting life! I dye!  
She hates! Ah me! It makes me mad;  
As if love fir'd his torch at a moist eye,  
Or with his joyes e're crown'd the sad.  
Oh, let me live and shout, when I fall on;  
Let me ev'n triumph in the first attempt!  
Loves duellist from conquest 's not exempt,  
When his fair murdresse shall not gain one groan,  
And he expire ev'n in ovation.

### II.

Let me make my approach, when I lye downe  
With counter-wrought and travers eyes;<54.1>  
With peals of confidence batter the towne;  
Had ever beggar yet the keyes?  
No, I will vary stormes with sun and winde;  
Be rough, and offer calme condition;  
March in and pread,<54.2> or starve the garrison.  
Let her make sallies hourelly: yet I'le find  
(Though all beat of) shee's to be undermin'd.

### III.

Then may it please your little excellence  
Of hearts t' ordaine, by sound of lips,  
That henceforth none in tears dare love comence  
(Her thoughts ith' full, his, in th' eclipse);  
On paine of having 's launce broke on her bed,  
That he be branded all free beauties' slave,  
And his own hollow eyes be domb'd his grave:  
Since in your hoast that coward nere was fed,  
Who to his prostrate ere was prostrated.

<54.1> This seems to be it phrase borrowed by the poet from his military vocabulary. He wishes to express that he had fortified his eyes to resist the glances of his fair opponent.

<54.2> Original reads most unintelligibly and absurdly MARCH IN (AND PRAY'D) OR, &c. TO PREAD is TO PILLAGE.

I.

Tell me, ye subtile judges in loves treasury,  
Inform me, which hath most inrich mine eye,  
This diamonds greatnes, or its clarity?

II.

Ye cloudy spark lights, whose vast multitude  
Of fires are harder to be found then view'd,  
Waite on this star in her first magnitude.

III.

Calmely or roughly! Ah, she shines too much;  
That now I lye (her influence is such),  
Chrusht with too strong a hand, or soft a touch.

IV.

Lovers, beware! a certaine, double harme  
Waits your proud hopes, her looks al-killing charm  
Guarded by her as true victorious arme.

V.

Thus with her eyes brave Tamyris spake dread,  
Which when the kings dull breast not entered,  
Finding she could not looke, she strook him dead.

<55.1> This word, though generally used in a bad sense by early writers, does not seem to bear in the present case any offensive meaning. The late editors of Nares quote a passage from one of Cowley's ESSAYS, in which that writer seems to imply by the term merely a fine woman.

<<TOC.1>> Since the note at p. 133 <i.e. note 55.1> was written, the following description by Aubrey (LIVES, &c., ii. 332), of a picture of the Lady Venetia Digby has fallen under my notice. "Also, at Mr. Rose's, a jeweller in Henrietta Street, in Covent Garden, is an excellent piece of hers, drawne after she was newly dead. She had a most lovely sweet-turned face, delicate darke browne haire. She had a perfect healthy constitution; strong; good skin; well-proportioned; inclining to a BONA-ROBA."

I.

I cannot tell, who loves the skeleton  
Of a poor marmoset; nought but boan, boan;  
Give me a nakednesse, with her cloath's on.

II.

Such, whose white-sattin upper coat of skin,  
Cut upon velvet rich incarnadin,<56.1>  
Has yet a body (and of flesh) within.

III.

Sure, it is meant good husbandry<56.2> in men,  
Who do incorporate with aery leane,  
T' repair their sides, and get their ribb agen.

IV.

Hard hap unto that huntsman, that decrees  
Fat joys for all his swet, when as he sees,  
After his 'say,<56.3> nought but his keepers fees.

V.

Then, Love, I beg, when next thou tak'st thy bow,  
Thy angry shafts, and dost heart-chasing go,  
Passe RASCALL DEARE, strike me the largest doe.<56.4>

<56.1> i.e. Carnation hue, a species of red. As an adjective, the word is peculiarly rare.

<56.2> Management or economy.

<56.3> i.e. Essay.

<56.4> A RASCAL DEER was formerly a well-known term among sportsmen, signifying a lean beast,

not worth pursuit. Thus in A C. MERY TALYS (1525), No. 29, we find:—"[they] apoynted thys Welchman to stand still, and forbade him in any wyse to shote at no rascal dere, but to make sure of the greate male, and spare not." In the new edition of Nares, other and more recent examples of the employment of the term are given. But in the BOOK OF SAINT ALBANS, 1486, RASCAL is used in the signification merely of a beast other than one of "enchace."

"And where that ye come in playne or in place,  
I shall you tell whyche ben bestys of enchace.  
One of them is the bucke: a nother is the doo:  
The foxe and the marteron: and the wylde roo.  
And ye shall, my dere chylde, other bestys all,  
Where so ye theym finde, Rascall ye shall them call."

#### A LA BOURBON.

DONE MOY PLUS DE PITIE OU<57.1> PLUS DE CREAULTE,  
CAR SANS CI IE NE PUIS PAS VIURE, NE MORIR.

##### I.

Divine Destroyer, pitty me no more,  
Or else more pitty me;<57.2>  
Give me more love, ah, quickly give me more,  
Or else more cruelty!  
For left thus as I am,  
My heart is ice and flame;  
And languishing thus, I  
Can neither live nor dye!

##### II.

Your glories are ecliptst, and hidden in the grave  
Of this indifferency;  
And, Caelia, you can neither altars have,  
Nor I, a Diety:  
They are aspects divine,  
That still or smile, or shine,  
Or, like th' offended sky,  
Frowne death immediately.

<57.1> Original reads AU.

<57.2> In his poem entitled "Mediocrity in Love rejected," Carew has a similar sentiment:—

"Give me more Love, or more Disdain,  
The Torrid, or the Frozen Zone,  
Bring equall ease unto my paine;  
The Temperate affords me none:  
Either extreme, of Love, or Hate,  
Is sweeter than a calme estate."

Carew's POEMS, ed. 1651, p. 14.

And so also Stanley (AYRES AND DIALOGUES, set by J. Gamble, 1656, p. 20):—

"So much of absence and delay,  
That thus afflicts my memorie.  
Why dost thou kill me every day,  
Yet will not give me leave to die?"

#### THE FAIRE BEGGER.

##### I.

Comanding asker, if it be  
Pity that you faine would have,  
Then I turne begger unto thee,  
And aske the thing that thou dost crave.  
I will suffice thy hungry need,

So thou wilt but my fancy feed.

II.

In all ill yeares, was<58.1> ever knowne  
On so much beauty such a dearth?  
Which, in that thrice-bequeathed gowne,  
Lookes like the Sun eclipt with Earth,  
Like gold in canvas, or with dirt  
Unsoyled Ermins close begirt.

III.

Yet happy he, that can but tast  
This whiter skin, who thirsty is!  
Fooles dote on sattin<58.2> motions lac'd:  
The gods go naked in their blisse.  
At<58.3> th' barrell's head there shines the vine,  
There only relishes the wine.

IV.

There quench my heat, and thou shalt sup  
Worthy the lips that it must touch,  
Nectar from out the starry cup:  
I beg thy breath not halfe so much.  
So both our wants supplied shall be,  
You'l give for love, I, charity.

V.

Cheape then are pearle-imbroderies,  
That not adorne, but cloud<58.4> thy wast;  
Thou shalt be cloath'd above all prise,  
If thou wilt promise me imbrac't.<58.5>  
Wee'l ransack neither chest nor shelve:  
Ill cover thee with mine owne selfe.

VI.

But, cruel, if thou dost deny  
This necessary almes to me,  
What soft-soul'd man but with his eye  
And hand will hence be shut to thee?  
Since all must judge you more unkinde:  
I starve your body, you, my minde.

<58.1> Original reads WA'ST.

<58.2> Satin seems to have been much in vogue about this time as a material for female dress. "Their glory springs from sattin, Their vanity from feather." A DESCRIPTION OF WOMAN in WITS INTERPRETER, 1662, p. 115.

<58.3> Original has AND.

<58.4> Original reads CLOUDS.

<58.5> i.e. TO BE embraced.

[A DIALOGUE BETWIXT CORDANUS AND AMORET, ON A LOST HEART.]

Cord. Distressed pilgrim, whose dark clouded eyes  
Speak thee a martyr to love's cruelties,  
Whither away?

Amor. What pitying voice I hear,  
Calls back my flying steps?

Cord. Pr'ythee, draw near.

Amor. I shall but say, kind swain, what doth become  
Of a lost heart, ere to Elysium  
It wounded walks?

Cord. First, it does freely flye



Into the pleasures of a lover's eye;  
 But, once condemn'd to scorn, it fetter'd lies,  
 An ever-bowing slave to tyrannies.  
 Amor. I pity its sad fate, since its offence  
 Was but for love. Can<59.1> tears recall it thence?  
 Cord. O no, such tears, as do for pity call,  
 She proudly scorns, and glories at their fall.  
 Amor. Since neither sighs nor tears, kind shepherd, tell,  
 Will not a kiss prevail?  
 Cord. Thou may'st as well  
 Court Eccho with a kiss.  
 Amor. Can no art move  
 A sacred violence to make her love?  
 Cord. O no! 'tis only Destiny or<59.2> Fate  
 Fashions our wills either to love or hate.  
 Amor. Then, captive heart, since that no humane spell  
 Hath power to graspe thee his, farewell.  
 Cord.<59.3> Farewell.  
 Cho. Lost hearts, like lambs drove from their folds by fears,  
 May back return by chance, but not<59.4> by tears.]<59.5>

<59.1> So Cotgrave. Lawes, and after him Singer, read CAN'T.

<59.2> So Cotgrave. Lawes and Singer read AND.

<59.3> Omitted by Lawes and Singer: I follow Cotgrave.

<59.4> So Cotgrave. Lawes printed NE'ER.

<59.5> This is taken from AYRES AND DIALOGUES FOR ONE, TWO, AND THREE VOYCES, By Henry Lawes, 1653-5-8, where it is set to music for two trebles by H. L. It was not included in the posthumous collection of Lovelace's poems. This dialogue is also found in WITS INTERPRETER, by J. Cotgrave, 1662, 8vo, page 203 (first printed in 1655), and a few improved readings have been adopted from that text.

## COMMENDATORY AND OTHER VERSES, PREFIXED TO VARIOUS PUBLICATIONS BETWEEN 1638 AND 1647

### AN ELEGIE.

PRINCESSE KATHERINE<60.1><<AN.3>> BORNE, CHRISTENED, BURIED,  
IN ONE DAY.

You, that can haply<60.2> mixe your joyes with cries,  
 And weave white Ios with black Elegies,  
 Can caroll out a dirge, and in one breath  
 Sing to the tune either of life, or death;  
 You, that can weepe the gladnesse of the spheres,  
 And pen a hymne, in stead of inke, with teares;  
 Here, here your unproportion'd wit let fall,  
 To celebrate this new-borne funerall,  
 And greete that little greatnesse, which from th' wombe  
 Dropt both a load to th' cradle and the tombe.

Bright soule! teach us, to warble with what feet  
 Thy swathing linnen and thy winding sheet,  
 Weepe,<60.3> or shout forth that fonts solemnitie,  
 Which at once christn'd and buried<60.4> thee,  
 And change our shriller passions with that sound,  
 First told thee into th' ayre, then to<60.5> the ground.

Ah, wert thou borne for this? only to call  
 The King and Queen guests to your buriall!  
 To bid good night, your day not yet begun,  
 And shew<60.6> a setting, ere a rising sun!

Or wouldst thou have thy life a martyrdom?  
Dye in the act of thy religion,  
Fit, excellently, innocently good,  
First sealing it with water, then thy blood?  
As when on blazing wings a blest man sores,  
And having past to God through fiery dores,  
Straight 's roab'd with flames, when the same element,  
Which was his shame, proves now his ornament;  
Oh, how he hast'ned death, burn't to be fryed,<60.7>  
Kill'd twice with each delay, till deified.  
So swift hath been thy race, so full of flight,  
Like him condemn'd, ev'n aged with a night,  
Cutting all lets with clouds, as if th' hadst been  
Like angels plum'd, and borne a Cherubin.

Or, in your journey towards heav'n, say,  
Tooke you the world a little in your way?  
Saw'st and dislik' st its vaine pompe, then didst flye  
Up for eternall glories to the skye?  
Like a religious ambitious one,  
Aspiredst for the everlasting crowne?

Ah! holy traytour to your brother prince,  
Rob'd of his birth-right and preheminance!  
Could you ascend yon' chaire of state e're him,  
And snatch from th' heire the starry diadem?  
Making your honours now as much uneven,  
As gods on earth are lesse then saints in heav'n.

Triumph! sing triumphs, then! Oh, put on all  
Your richest lookes, drest for this festivall!  
Thoughts full of ravisht reverence, with eyes  
So fixt, as when a saint we canonize;  
Clap wings with Seraphins before the throne  
At this eternall coronation,  
And teach your soules new mirth, such as may be  
Worthy this birth-day to divinity.

But ah! these blast your feasts, the jubilies  
We send you up are sad, as were our cries,  
And of true joy we can expresse no more  
Thus crown'd, then when we buried thee before.

Princesse in heav'n, forgivenes! whilst we  
Resigne our office to the HIERARCHY.

<60.1> All historical and genealogical works are deficient in minute information relative to the family of Charles I. Even in Anderson's ROYAL GENEALOGIES, 1732, and in the folio editions of Rapin and Tindal, these details are overlooked. At page 36 of his DESCENDANTS OF THE STUARTS, 1858, Mr. Townend observes that two of the children of Charles I. died in infancy, and of these the Princesse Katherine, commemorated by Lovelace, was perhaps one. The present verses were originally printed in MUSARUM OXONIENSIIUM CHARISTERIA, Oxon. 1638, 4to, from which a few better readings have been obtained. With the exceptions mentioned in the notes, the variations of the earlier text from that found here are merely literal.

<<AN.3>> P. 140. PRINCESSE KATHERINE, BORNE, &C., IN ONE DAY. In Ellis's ORIGINAL LETTERS, Second Series, iii. 265, is printed a scrap from Harl. MS. 6988, in the handwriting of the Princess Elizabeth, daughter of Charles I., giving a list of the children of that prince by Henrietta Maria, with the dates of their birth. There mention is made of a Princess Katherine, born Jan. 29, 1639. 1639 is, I believe, a slip of the pen for 1637; that is to say, the princess was born on the 29th of January, 1637-8. This discrepancy between the CHARISTERIA and the memorandum in Harl. MS. escaped Sir H. Ellis, who was possibly unaware of the existence of the former. For, unless a mistake is assumed on the part of the writer of the MS., the existence of TWO Princesses Katherine must be granted.

<60.2> This reading from CHARISTERIA, 1638, seems preferable to APTLY, as it stands in the LUCASTA.

<60.3> So the CHARISTERIA. The reading in LUCASTA is MOURNE.

<60.4> In LUCASTA the reading is BURIED, AND CHRIST'NED.

<60.5> This word is omitted in the LUCASTA; it is here supplied from the CHARISTERIA.

<60.6> LUCASTA reads SHOWE'S. SHEW, as printed in CHARISTERIA, is clearly the true word.

<60.7> i.e. freed. FREE and FREED were sometimes formerly pronounced like FRY and FRYED: for Lord North, in his FOREST OF VARIETIES, 1645, has these lines—

"Birds that long have lived free,  
Caught and cag'd, but pine and die."

Here evidently FREE is intended to rhyme with DIE.

CLITOPHON AND LUCIPPE TRANSLATED.<61.1>  
TO THE LADIES.

Pray, ladies, breath, awhile lay by  
Caelestial Sydney's ARCADY;<61.2>  
Heere's a story that doth claime  
A little respite from his flame:  
Then with a quick dissolving looke  
Unfold the smoothnes of this book,  
To which no art (except your sight)  
Can reach a worthy epithite;  
'Tis an abstract of all volumes,  
A pillaster of all columnes  
Fancy e're rear'd to wit, to be  
The smallest gods epitome,  
And so compactedly expresse  
All lovers pleasing wretchednes.

Gallant Pamela's<61.3> majesty  
And her sweet sisters modesty  
Are fixt in each of you; you are,  
Distinct, what these together were;  
Divinest, that are really  
What Cariclea's<61.4> feign'd to be;  
That are ev'ry one the Nine,  
And brighter here Astreas shine;  
View our Lucippe, and remaine  
In her, these beauties o're againe.

Amazement! Noble Clitophon  
Ev'n now lookt somewhat colder on  
His cooler mistresse, and she too  
Smil'd not as she us'd to do.  
See! the individuall payre  
Are at sad oddes, and parted are;  
They quarrell, aemulate, and stand  
At strife, who first shal kisse your hand.

A new dispute there lately rose  
Betwixt the Greekes and Latines, whose  
Temples should be bound with glory,  
In best languaging this story;<61.5>

Yee heyres of love, that with one SMILE  
A ten-yeeres war can reconcile;  
Peacefull Hellens! Vertuous! See:  
The jarring languages agree!  
And here, all armes layd by, they doe  
In English meet to wayt on you.

<61.1> Achillis Tatii Alexandrini DE LUCIPPES ET CLITOPHONTIS AMORIBUS LIBRI OCTO. The translation of this celebrated work, to which Lovelace contributed the commendatory verses here republished, was executed by his friend Anthony Hodges, A.M., of New College, Oxford, and was printed at Oxford in 1638, 8vo. There had been already a translation by W. Burton, purporting to be done from the Greek, in 1597, 4to. The text of 1649 and that of 1638 exhibit so many variations, that the reader may be glad to have the opportunity of comparison:—

"TO THE LADIES.

"Fair ones, breathe: a while lay by  
Blessed Sidney's ARCADY:  
Here's a story that will make  
You not repent HIM to forsake;  
And with your dissolving looke  
Vntie the contents of this booke;  
To which nought (except your sight)  
Can give a worthie epithite.  
'Tis an abstract of all volumes,  
A pillaster of all columnes  
Fancie e're rear'd to wit, to be  
Little LOVE'S epitome,  
And compactedly expresse  
All lovers happy wretchednesse.

"Brave PAMELA'S majestie  
And her sweet sister's modestie  
Are fixt in each of you, you are  
Alone, what these together were  
Divinest, that are really  
What Cariclea's feign'd to be;  
That are every one, the Nine;  
And on earth Astraeas shine;  
Be our LEUCIPPE, and remaine  
In HER, all these o're againe.

"Wonder! Noble CLITOPHON  
Me thinkes lookes somewhat colder on  
His beauteous mistresse, and she too  
Smiles not as she us'd to doe.  
See! the individuall payre  
Are at oddes and parted are;  
Quarrel, emulate, and stand  
At strife, who first shall kisse your hand.

"A new warre e're while arose  
'Twixt the GREEKES and LATINES, whose  
Temples should be bound with glory  
In best languaging this story:  
You, that with one lovely smile  
A ten-yeares warre can reconcile;  
Peacefull Hellens awfull see  
The jarring languages agree,  
And here all armes laid by, they doe  
Meet in English to court you."

Rich. Lovelace, Ma: Ar: A: Glou: Eq: Aur: Fil: Nat: Max.

See Halliwell's DICTIONARY OF OLD PLAYS, 1860, art. CLYTOPHON.

<61.2> There can be no doubt that Sidney's ARCADIA was formerly as popular in its way among the readers of both sexes as Sir Richard Baker's CHRONICLE appears to have been. The former was especially recommended to those who sought occasional relaxation from severer studies. See Higford's INSTITUTIONS, 1658, 8vo, p. 46-7. In his poem of THE SURPRIZE, Cotton describes his nymph as reading the ARCADIA on the bank of a river—

"The happy OBJECT of her eye  
Was SIDNEY'S living ARCADY:  
Whose amorous tale had so betrai'd

Desire in this all-lovely maid;  
That, whilst her cheek a blush did warm,  
I read LOVES story in her form."

POEMS ON SEVERAL OCCASIONS.

By Charles Cotton, Esq. Lond. 1689, 8vo, p. 392.

<61.3> The Pamela of Sydney's ARCADIA

<61.4> The allusion is to the celebrated story of THEAGENES AND CHARICLEA, which was popular in this country at an early period. A drama on the subject was performed before Court in 1574.

<61.5> Lovelace refers, it may be presumed, to an edition of ACHILLES TATIUS, in which the Greek text was printed with a Latin translation.

TO MY TRUELY VALIANT, LEARNED FRIEND; WHO IN HIS BOOKE<62.1>  
RESOLV'D THE ART GLADIATORY INTO THE MATHEMATICKS.

I.

Hearke, reader! wilt be learn'd ith' warres?  
A gen'ral in a gowne?  
Strike a league with arts and scarres,  
And snatch from each a crowne?

II.

Wouldst be a wonder? Such a one,  
As should win with a looke?  
A bishop in a garison,  
And conquer by the booke?

III.

Take then this mathematick shield,  
And henceforth by its rules  
Be able to dispute ith' field,  
And combate in the schooles.

IV.

Whilst peaceful learning once againe  
And the souldier so concord,  
As that he fights now with her penne,  
And she writes with his sword.

<62.1> "PALLAS ARMATA. The Gentlemen's Armorie. Wherein the right and genuine use of the Rapier and of the Sword, as well against the right handed as against the left handed man 'is displayed.' [By G. A.] London, 1639, 8vo. With several illustrative woodcuts." The lines, as originally printed in PALLAS ARMATA, vary from those subsequently admitted into LUCASTA. They are as follow:—

TO THE READER.

Harke, reader, would'st be learn'd ith' warres,  
A CAPTAINE in a gowne?  
Strike a league with bookes and starres,  
And weave of both the crowne?

Would'st be a wonder? Such a one  
As would winne with a looke?  
A schollar in a garrison?  
And conquer by the booke?

Take then this mathematick shield,  
And henceforth by its rules,  
Be able to dispute ith' field,  
And combate in the schooles.

Whil'st peacefull learning once agen  
And th' souldier do concorde,  
As that he fights now with her penne,  
And she writes with his sword.

TO FLETCHER REVIV'D. <63.1>

How have I bin religious? what strange good  
Has scap't me, that I never understood?  
Have I hel-guarded Haeresie o'rthrowne?  
Heald wounded states? made kings and kingdoms one?  
That FATE should be so merciful to me,  
To let me live t' have said I have read thee.

Faire star, ascend! the joy! the life! the light  
Of this tempestuous age, this darke worlds sight!  
Oh, from thy crowne of glory dart one flame  
May strike a sacred reverence, whilst thy name  
(Like holy flamens to their god of day)  
We bowing, sing; and whilst we praise, we pray.

Bright spirit! whose aeternal motion  
Of wit, like Time, stil in it selfe did run,  
Binding all others in it, and did give  
Commission, how far this or that shal live;  
Like DESTINY of poems who, as she  
Signes death to all, her selfe cam never dye.

And now thy purple-robed Traegy, <63.2>  
In her imbroider'd buskins, cal's mine eye,  
Where the brave Aetius we see betray'd,  
T' obey his death, whom thousand lives obey'd;  
Whilst that the mighty foole his scepter breakes,  
And through his gen'ral's wounds his own doome speakes,  
Weaving thus richly VALENTINIAN,  
The costliest monarch with the cheapest man.

Souldiers may here to their old glories adde,  
The LOVER love, and be with reason MAD: <63.3>  
Not, as of old, Alcides furious, <63.4>  
Who wilder then his bull did teare the house  
(Hurling his language with the canvas stone):  
Twas thought the monster ror'd the sob'rer tone.

But ah! when thou thy sorrow didst inspire  
With passions, blacke as is her darke attire,  
Virgins as sufferers have wept to see  
So white a soule, so red a crueltie;  
That thou hast griev'd, and with unthought redresse  
Dri'd their wet eyes who now thy mercy blesse;  
Yet, loth to lose thy watry jewell, when  
Joy wip't it off, laughter straight sprung't agen.

Now ruddy checked Mirth with rosie wings <63.5>  
Fans ev'ry brow with gladnesse, whilst she sings  
Delight to all, and the whole theatre  
A festivall in heaven doth appeare:  
Nothing but pleasure, love; and (like the morne)  
Each face a gen'ral smiling doth adorne.

Heare ye, foul speakers, that pronounce the aire  
Of stewes and shores, <63.6> I will informe you where  
And how to cloath aright your wanton wit,  
Without her nasty bawd attending it: <63.7>  
View here a loose thought sayd with such a grace,  
Minerva might have spoke in Venus face;  
So well disguis'd, that 'twas conceiv'd by none  
But Cupid had Diana's linnen on;

And all his naked parts so vail'd, th' expresse  
The shape with clowding the uncomlinesse;  
That if this Reformation, which we  
Receiv'd, had not been buried with thee,  
The stage (as this worke) might have liv'd and lov'd  
Her lines, the austere Skarlet<63.8> had approv'd;  
And th' actors wisely been from that offence  
As cleare, as they are now from audience.<63.9>

Thus with thy Genius did the scaene expire,<63.10>  
Wanting thy active and correcting fire,  
That now (to spread a darknesse over all)  
Nothing remains but Poesie to fall:  
And though from these thy Embers we receive  
Some warmth, so much as may be said, we live;  
That we dare praise thee blushesse, in the head  
Of the best piece Hermes to Love<63.11> e're read;  
That we rejoyce and glory in thy wit,  
And feast each other with remembring it;  
That we dare speak thy thought, thy acts recite:  
Yet all men henceforth be afraid to write.

<63.1> Fletcher the dramatist fell a victim to the plague of 1625. See Aubrey's LIVES, vol. 2, part i. p. 352. The verses here republished were originally prefixed to the first collected edition of Beaumont and Fletcher's TRAGEDIES AND COMEDIES, 1647, folio. It is scarcely necessary to remind the reader that Lovelace was only a child when Fletcher died.

<63.2> VALENTINIAN, A TRAGEDY. First printed in the folio of 1647.

<63.3> THE MAD LOVER. Also first printed in the folio of 1647.

<63.4> An allusion to the HERCULES FURENS of Euripides. Lovelace had, no doubt, some tincture of Greek scholarship (See Wood's ATH. OX. ii. 466); but as to the extent of his acquirements in this direction, it is hard to speak with confidence. Among the books of Mr. Thomas Jolley, dispersed in 1853, was a copy of Clenardus INSTITUTIONES GRAECAE LINGVAE, Lugd. Batav. 1626, 8vo., on the title of which was "Richard Lovelace, 1630, March 5," supposed to be the autograph of the poet when a schoolboy.

<63.5> In the margin of the copy of 1647, against these lines is written—"COMEDIES: THE SPANISH CURATE, THE HUMOROUS LIEUTENANT, THE TAMER TAMED, THE LITTLE FRENCH LAWYER."

<63.6> Sewers.

<63.7> THE CUSTOME OF THE COUNTRIE—Marginal note in the copy of 1647.

<63.8> Query, LAUD.

<63.9> These lines refer to the prohibition published by the Parliament against the performance of stage-plays and interludes. The first ordinance appeared in 1642, but that not being found effectual, a more stringent measure was enacted in 1647, directing, under the heaviest penalties, the total and immediate abolition of theatricals.

<63.10> i.e. The scenic drama. The original meaning of SCENE was a wooden stage for the representation of plays, &c., and it is here used therefore in its primitive sense.

<63.11> In the old mythology of Greece, Cupid is the pupil of Mercury or Hermes; or, in other words, LOVE is instructed by ELOQUENCE and WIT.

LUCASTA.

Posthume  
POEMS  
OF

**RICHARD LOVELACE ESQ;**

THOSE HONOURS COME TOO LATE,  
THAT ON OUR ASHES WAITE.  
Mart. lib. I. Epig. 26.

**LONDON.**

Printed by WILLIAM GOBBID for

**CLEMENT DARBY.**

1659.

**THE DEDICATION.**

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE JOHN LOVELACE, ESQUIRE.<64.1>

**SIR,**

LUCASTA (fair, but hapless maid!)  
Once flourish'd underneath the shade  
Of your illustrious Mother; now,  
An orphan grown, she bows to you!  
To you, her vertues' noble heir;  
Oh may she find protection there!  
Nor let her welcome be the less,  
'Cause a rough hand makes her address:  
One (to whom foes the Muses are)  
Born and bred up in rugged war:  
For, conscious how unfit I am,  
I only have pronounc'd her name  
To waken pity in your brest,  
And leave her tears to plead the rest.

Sir,

Your most obedient  
Servant and kinsman

**DUDLEY POSTHUMUS-LOVELACE.**

<64.1> This gentleman was the eldest son of John, second Lord Lovelace of Hurley, co. Berks, by Anne, daughter of Thomas, Earl of Cleveland. The first part of LUCASTA was inscribed by the poet himself to Lady Lovelace, his mother.

**POEMS.**

**TO LVCASTA.**

**HER RESERVED LOOKS.**

LUCASTA, frown, and let me die,  
But smile, and see, I live;  
The sad indifference of your eye  
Both kills and doth reprieve.  
You hide our fate within its screen;  
We feel our judgment, ere we hear.  
So in one picture I have seen  
An angel here, the devil there.

**LUCASTA LAUGHING.**

Heark, how she laughs aloud,



Although the world put on its shroud:  
Wept at by the fantastic crowd,  
Who cry: one drop, let fall  
From her, might save the universal ball.  
    She laughs again  
    At our ridiculous pain;  
And at our merry misery  
    She laughs, until she cry.  
    Sages, forbear  
    That ill-contrived tear,  
    Although your fear  
Doth barricado hope from your soft ear.  
That which still makes her mirth to flow,  
Is our sinister-handed woe,  
Which downwards on its head doth go,  
And, ere that it is sown, doth grow.  
    This makes her spleen contract,  
    And her just pleasure feast:  
For the unjustest act  
    Is still the pleasant'st jest.

## NIGHT.

### TO LUCASTA.

Night! loathed jaylor of the lock'd up sun,  
And tyrant-turnkey on committed day,  
Bright eyes lye fettered in thy dungeon,  
And Heaven it self doth thy dark wards obey.  
    Thou dost arise our living hell;  
    With thee grones, terrors, furies dwell;  
    Until LUCASTA doth awake,  
And with her beams these heavy chaines off shake.

Behold! with opening her almighty lid,  
Bright eyes break rowling, and with lustre spread,  
And captive day his chariot mounted is;  
    Night to her proper hell is beat,  
    And screwed to her ebon seat;  
Till th' Earth with play oppressed lies,  
And draws again the curtains of her eyes.

But, bondslave, I know neither day nor night;  
Whether she murth'ring sleep, or saving wake;  
Now broyl'd ith' zone of her reflected light,  
Then frose, my isicles, not sinews shake.  
    Smile then, new Nature, your soft blast  
    Doth melt our ice, and fires waste;  
Whil'st the scorch'd shiv'ring world new born  
Now feels it all the day one rising morn.

## LOVE INTHRON'D.

### ODE.

#### I.

Introth, I do my self perswade,  
    That the wilde boy is grown a man,  
And all his childishnesse off laid,  
E're since LUCASTA did his fires fan;  
    H' has left his apish jigs,  
    And whipping hearts like gigs:

For t' other day I heard him swear,  
That beauty should be crown'd in honours chair.

II.

With what a true and heavenly state  
He doth his glorious darts dispence,  
Now cleans'd from falsehood, blood and hate,  
And newly tipt with innocence!  
Love Justice is become,  
And doth the cruel doome;  
Reversed is the old decree;  
Behold! he sits inthron'd with majestie.

III.

Inthroned in LUCASTA'S eye,  
He doth our faith and hearts survey;  
Then measures them by sympathy,  
And each to th' others breast convey;  
Whilst to his altars now  
The frozen vestals bow,  
And strickt Diana too doth go  
A-hunting with his fear'd, exchanged bow.

IV.

Th' imbracing seas and ambient air  
Now in his holy fires burn;  
Fish couple, birds and beasts in pair  
Do their own sacrifices turn.  
This is a miracle,  
That might religion swell;  
But she, that these and their god awes,  
Her crowned self submits to her own laws.

HER MUFFE.

I.

Twas not for some calm blessing to deceive,  
Thou didst thy polish'd hands in shagg'd furs weave;  
It were no blessing thus obtain'd;  
Thou rather would'st a curse have gain'd,  
Then let thy warm driven snow be ever stain'd.

II.

Not that you feared the discolo'ring cold  
Might alchymize their silver into gold;  
Nor could your ten white nuns so sin,  
That you should thus pennance them in,  
Each in her coarse hair smock of discipline.

III.

Nor, Hero-like who, on their crest still wore  
A lyon, panther, leopard, or a bore,  
To looke their enemies in their herse,  
Thou would'st thy hand should deeper pierce,  
And, in its softness rough, appear more fierce.

IV.

No, no, LUCASTA, destiny decreed,  
That beasts to thee a sacrifice should bleed,  
And strip themselves to make you gay:  
For ne'r yet herald did display  
A coat, where SABLES upon ERMIN lay.

V.

This for lay-lovers, that must stand at dore,

Salute the threshold, and admire no more;  
But I, in my invention tough,  
Rate not this outward bliss enough,  
But still contemplate must the hidden muffle.

A BLACK PATCH<65.1> ON LUCASTA'S FACE.

Dull as I was, to think that a court fly  
Presum'd so neer her eye;  
When 'twas th' industrious bee  
Mistook her glorious face for paradise,  
To summe up all his chymistry of spice;  
With a brave pride and honour led,  
Neer both her suns he makes his bed,  
And, though a spark, struggles to rise as red.  
Then aemulates the gay  
Daughter of day;  
Acts the romantick phoenix' fate,  
When now, with all his sweets lay'd out in state,  
LUCASTA scatters but one heat,  
And all the aromatick pills do sweat,  
And gums calcin'd themselves to powder beat,  
Which a fresh gale of air  
Conveys into her hair;  
Then chaft, he's set on fire,  
And in these holy flames doth glad expire;  
And that black marble tablet there  
So neer her either sphere  
Was plac'd; nor foyl, nor ornament,  
But the sweet little bee's large monument.

<65.1> The following is a poet's lecture to the ladies of his time on the long prevailing practice of wearing patches, in which it seems that Lucasta acquiesced:—

BLACK PATCHES.

VANITAS VANITATUM.

LADIES turn conjurers, and can impart  
The hidden mystery of the black art,  
Black artificial patches do betray;  
They more affect the works of night than day.  
The creature strives the Creator to disgrace,  
By patching that which is a perfect face:  
A little stain upon the purest dye  
Is both offensive to the heart and eye.  
Defile not then with spots that face of snow,  
Where the wise God His workmanship doth show,  
The light of nature and the light of grace  
Is the complexion for a lady's face.

FLAMMA SINE FUMO, by R. Watkyns, 1662, p. 81.

In a poem entitled THE BURSSE OF REFORMATION, in praise of the New Exchange, printed in WIT RESTORED, 1658, patches are enumerated among the wares of all sorts to be procured there:—

"Heer patches are of every cut,  
For pimples and for scars."

They were also used for rheum, as appears from a passage in WESTWARD HOE, 1607:—

"JUDITH. I am so troubled with the rheum too. Mouse, what's good for it?

HONEY. How often I have told you you must get a patch."

Webster's WORKS, ed. Hazlitt, i. 87. See Durfey's PILLS TO PURGE MELANCHOLY, v. 197.

"Mrs. Pepys wore patches, and so did my Lady Sandwich and her daughter."—DIARY, 30 Aug. and 20 Oct. 1660.

## ANOTHER.

### I.

As I beheld a winter's evening air,  
Curl'd in her court-false-locks of living hair,  
Butter'd with jessamine the sun left there.

### II.

Galliard and clinquant she appear'd to give,  
A serenade or ball to us that grieve,  
And teach us A LA MODE more gently live.

### III.

But as a Moor, who to her cheeks prefers  
White spots, t' allure her black idolaters,  
Me thought she look'd all ore-bepatch'd with stars.

### IV.

Like the dark front of some Ethiopian queen,  
Vailed all ore with gems of red, blew, green,  
Whose ugly night seem'd masked with days skreen.

### V.

Whilst the fond people offer'd sacrifice  
To saphyrs, 'stead of veins and arteries,  
And bow'd unto the diamonds, not her eyes.

### VI.

Behold LUCASTA'S face, how't glows like noon!  
A sun intire is her complexion,  
And form'd of one whole constellation.

### VII.

So gently shining, so serene, so cleer,  
Her look doth universal Nature cheer;  
Only a cloud or two hangs here and there.

## TO LUCASTA.

### I.

I laugh and sing, but cannot tell  
Whether the folly on't sounds well;  
    But then I groan,  
    Methinks, in tune;  
Whilst grief, despair and fear dance to the air  
    Of my despised prayer.

### II.

A pretty antick love does this,  
Then strikes a galliard with a kiss;  
    As in the end  
    The chords they rend;  
So you but with a touch from your fair hand  
    Turn all to saraband.

## TO LUCASTA.

### I.

Like to the sent'nel stars, I watch all night;

For still the grand round of your light  
And glorious breast  
Awake<66.1> in me an east:  
Nor will my rolling eyes ere know a west.

II.

Now on my down I'm toss'd as on a wave,  
And my repose is made my grave;  
Fluttering I lye,  
Do beat my self and dye,  
But for a resurrection from your eye.

III.

Ah, my fair murtheresse! dost thou cruelly heal  
With various pains to make me well?  
Then let me be  
Thy cut anatomie,  
And in each mangled part my heart you'l see.

<66.1> Original has AWAKES.

### LUCASTA AT THE BATH.

I.

I' th' autumn of a summer's day,  
When all the winds got leave to play,  
LUCASTA, that fair ship, is lanch'd,  
And from its crust this almond blanch'd.

II.

Blow then, unruly northwind, blow,  
'Till in their holds your eyes you stow;  
And swell your cheeks, bequeath chill death;  
See! she hath smil'd thee out of breath.

III.

Court, gentle zephyr, court and fan  
Her softer breast's carnation wan;  
Your charming rhetorick of down  
Flyes scatter'd from before her frown.

IV.

Say, my white water-lilly, say,  
How is't those warm streams break away,  
Cut by thy chaste cold breast, which dwells  
Amidst them arm'd in isicles?

V.

And the hot floods, more raging grown,  
In flames of thee then in their own,  
In their distempers wildly glow,  
And kisse thy pillar of fix'd snow.

VI.

No sulphur, through whose each blew vein  
The thick and lazy currents strein,  
Can cure the smarting nor the fell  
Blisters of love, wherewith they swell.

VII.

These great physicians of the blind,  
The lame, and fatal blains of Inde  
In every drop themselves now see  
Speckled with a new leprosie.

VIII.

As sick drinks are with old wine dash'd,  
Foul waters too with spirits wash'd,  
Thou greiv'd, perchance, one tear let'st fall,  
Which straight did purifie them all.

IX.

And now is cleans'd enough the flood,  
Which since runs cleare as doth thy blood;  
Of the wet pearls uncrown thy hair,  
And mantle thee with ermin air.

X.

Lucasta, hail! fair conqueresse  
Of fire, air, earth and seas!  
Thou whom all kneel to, yet even thou  
Wilt unto love, thy captive, bow.

THE ANT.<67.1>

I.

Forbear, thou great good husband, little ant;  
A little respite from thy flood of sweat!  
Thou, thine own horse and cart under this plant,  
Thy spacious tent, fan thy prodigious heat;  
Down with thy double load of that one grain!  
It is a granarie for all thy train.

II.

Cease, large example of wise thrift, awhile  
(For thy example is become our law),  
And teach thy frowns a seasonable smile:  
So Cato sometimes the nak'd Florals saw.<67.2>  
And thou, almighty foe, lay by thy sting,  
Whilst thy unpay'd musicians, crickets, sing.

III.

LUCASTA, she that holy makes the day,  
And 'stills new life in fields of fueillemort,<67.3>  
Hath back restor'd their verdure with one ray,  
And with her eye bid all to play and sport,  
Ant, to work still! age will thee truant call;  
And to save now, th'art worse than prodigal.

IV.

Austere and cynick! not one hour t' allow,  
To lose with pleasure, what thou gotst with pain;  
But drive on sacred festivals thy plow,  
Tearing high-ways with thy ore-charged wain.  
Not all thy life-time one poor minute live,  
And thy ore-labour'd bulk with mirth relieve?

V.

Look up then, miserable ant, and spie  
Thy fatal foes, for breaking of their<67.4> law,  
Hov'ring above thee: Madam MARGARET PIE:  
And her fierce servant, meagre Sir JOHN DAW:  
Thy self and storehouse now they do store up,  
And thy whole harvest too within their crop.

VI.

Thus we unt[h]rifty thrive within earth's tomb  
For some more rav'nous and ambitious jaw:  
The grain in th' ant's, the ant<67.5> in the pie's womb,  
The pie in th' hawk's, the hawk<67.6> ith' eagle's maw.  
So scattering to hord 'gainst a long day,

Thinking to save all, we cast all away.

<67.1> A writer in CENSURA LITERARIA, x. 292 (first edit.)—the late E. V. Utterson, Esq.—highly praises this little poem, and says that it is not unworthy of Cowper. I think it highly probable that the translation from Martial (lib. vi. Ep. 15), at the end of the present volume, was executed prior to the composition of these lines; and that the latter were suggested by the former. Compare the beautiful description of the ant in the PROVERBS OF SOLOMON:—"Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways and be wise: which having no guide, overseer, or ruler, provideth her meat in the summer, and gathereth her food in the harvest.—PROVERBS, vi. 6-8.

In the poems of John Cleveland, 1669, is a piece entitled "Fuscara, or the Bee Errant," which is of a somewhat similar character, and is by no means a contemptible production, though spoiled by that LUES ALCHYMISTICA which disfigures so much of the poetry of Cleveland's time. The abilities of Cleveland as a writer seem to have been underrated by posterity, in proportion to the undue praise lavished upon him by his contemporaries.

<67.2> The Floralia, games antiently celebrated at Rome in honour of Flora.

<67.3> Here used for DEAD OR FADED VEGETATION, but strictly it means DEAD OR FADED LEAF. FILEMORT is another form of the same word.

<67.4> Original has HER.

<67.5> Original reads ANTS.

<67.6> Original reads HAWKS.

## SONG.

### I.

Strive not, vain lover, to be fine;  
Thy silk's the silk-worm's, and not thine:  
You lessen to a fly your mistriss' thought,  
To think it may be in a cobweb caught.  
What, though her thin transparent lawn  
Thy heart in a strong net hath drawn:  
Not all the arms the god of fire ere made  
Can the soft bulwarks of nak'd love invade.

### II.

Be truly fine, then, and yourself dress  
In her fair soul's immac'late glass.  
Then by reflection you may have the bliss  
Perhaps to see what a true fineness is;  
When all your gawderies will fit  
Those only that are poor in wit.  
She that a clinquant outside doth adore,  
Dotes on a gilded statue and no more.

## IN ALLUSION TO THE FRENCH SONG.

**N' ENTENDEZ VOUS PAS CE LANGUAGE.**

**CHORUS. THEN UNDERSTAND YOU NOT (FAIR CHOICE) THIS LANGUAGE WITHOUT TONGUE OR VOICE?**

### I.

How often have my tears  
Invaded your soft ears,  
And dropp'd their silent chimes  
A thousand thousand times?  
Whilst echo did your eyes,  
And sweetly sympathize;  
But that the wary lid  
Their sluces did forbid.

Cho. THEN UNDERSTAND YOU NOT (FAIR CHOICE)  
THIS LANGUAGE WITHOUT TONGUE OR VOICE?

II.

My arms did plead my wound,  
Each in the other bound;  
Volleys of sighs did crowd,  
And ring my griefs alowd;  
Grones, like a canon-ball,  
Batter'd the marble wall,  
That the kind neighb'ring grove  
Did mutiny for love.

Cho. THEN UNDERSTAND YOU NOT (FAIR CHOICE)  
THIS LANGUAGE WITHOUT TONGUE OR VOICE?

III.

The rheth'rick of my hand  
Woo'd you to understand;  
Nay, in our silent walk  
My very feet would talk;  
My knees were eloquent,  
And spake the love I meant;  
But deaf unto that ayr,  
They, bent, would fall in prayer.

Cho. YET UNDERSTAND YOU NOT (FAIR CHOICE)  
THIS LANGUAGE WITHOUT TONGUE OR VOICE?

IV.

No? Know, then, I would melt  
On every limb I felt,  
And on each naked part  
Spread my expanded heart,  
That not a vein of thee  
But should be fill'd with mee.  
Whilst on thine own down, I  
Would tumble, pant, and dye.

Cho. YOU UNDERSTAND NOT THIS (FAIR CHOICE);  
THIS LANGUAGE WANTS BOTH TONGUE AND VOICE.

COURANTE<68.1> MONSIEUR.

That frown, Aminta, now hath drown'd  
Thy bright front's pow'r, and crown'd  
Me that was bound.  
No, no, deceived cruel, no!  
Love's fiery darts,  
Till tipt with kisses, never kindle hearts.

Adieu, weak beauteous tyrant, see!  
Thy angry flames meant me,<68.2>  
Retort on thee:  
For know, it is decreed, proud fair,  
I ne'r must dye  
By any scorching, but a melting, eye.

<68.1> COURANTE was a favourite dance and dance-tune. It is still known under the same name.

<68.2> i.e. THAT meant me, which was intended for me.

A LOOSE SARABAND.



## I.

Nay, prethee, dear, draw nigher,  
 Yet closer, nigher yet;  
 Here is a double fire,  
 A dry one and a wet.  
 True lasting heavenly fuel  
 Puts out the vestal jewel,  
 When once we twining marry  
 Mad love with wild canary.

## II.

Off with that crowned Venice, <69.1>  
 'Till all the house doth flame,  
 Wee'l quench it straight in Rhenish,  
 Or what we must not name.  
 Milk lightning still asswageth;  
 So when our fury rageth,  
 As th' only means to cross it,  
 Wee'l drown it in love's posset.

## III.

Love never was well-willer  
 Unto my nag or mee,  
 Ne'r watter'd us ith' cellar,  
 But the cheap buttery.  
 At th' head of his own barrells,  
 Where broach'd are all his quarrels,  
 Should a true noble master  
 Still make his guest his taster.

## IV.

See, all the world how't staggers,  
 More ugly drunk than we,  
 As if far gone in daggers  
 And blood it seem'd to be.  
 We drink our glass of roses,  
 Which nought but sweets discloses:  
 Then in our loyal chamber  
 Refresh us with love's amber.

## V.

Now tell me, thou fair cripple,  
 That dumb canst scarcely see  
 Th' almightinesse of tippie,  
 And th' ods 'twixt thee and thee,  
 What of Elizium's missing,  
 Still drinking and still kissing;  
 Adoring plump October;  
 Lord! what is man, and <69.2> sober?

## VI.

Now, is there such a trifle  
 As honour, the fools gyant,  
 What is there left to rifle,  
 When wine makes all parts plyant?  
 Let others glory follow,  
 In their false riches wallow,  
 And with their grief be merry:  
 Leave me but love and sherry.

<69.1> QU. a crowned goblet of Venice glass.

<69.2> i.e. if.

Fair Princesse of the spacious air,  
That hast vouchsaf'd acquaintance here,  
With us are quarter'd below stairs,  
That can reach heav'n with nought but pray'rs;  
Who, when our activ'st wings we try,  
Advance a foot into the sky.

Bright heir t' th' bird imperial,  
From whose avenging penons fall  
Thunder and lightning twisted spun!  
Brave cousin-german to the Sun!  
That didst forsake thy throne and sphere,  
To be an humble pris'ner here;  
And for a pirsch of her soft hand,  
Resign the royal woods' command.

How often would'st thou shoot heav'ns ark,  
Then mount thy self into a lark;  
And after our short faint eyes call,  
When now a fly, now nought at all!  
Then stoop so swift unto our sence,  
As thou wert sent intelligence!

Free beauteous slave, thy happy feet  
In silver fetters vervails meet,  
And trample on that noble wrist,  
The gods have kneel'd in vain t' have kist.  
But gaze not, bold deceived spye,  
Too much oth' lustre of her eye;  
The Sun thou dost out stare, alas!  
Winks at the glory of her face.

Be safe then in thy velvet helm,  
Her looks are calms that do orewhelm,  
Then the Arabian bird more blest,  
Chafe in the spicery of her breast,  
And loose you in her breath a wind  
Sow'rs the delicious gales of Inde.

But now a quill from thine own wing  
I pluck, thy lofty fate to sing;  
Whilst we behold the varions fight  
With mingled pleasure and affright;  
The humbler hinds do fall to pray'r,  
As when an army's seen i' th' air,  
And the prophetick spannels run,  
And howle thy epicedium.

The heron mounted doth appear  
On his own Peg'sus a lanceer,  
And seems, on earth when he doth hut,  
A proper halberdier on foot;  
Secure i' th' moore, about to sup,  
The dogs have beat his quarters up.

And now he takes the open air,  
Drawes up his wings with tactick care;  
Whilst th' expert falcon swift doth climbe  
In subtle mazes serpentine;  
And to advantage closely twin'd  
She gets the upper sky and wind,  
Where she dissembles to invade,  
And lies a pol'tick ambuscade.

The hedg'd-in heron, whom the foe  
Awaits above, and dogs below,  
In his fortification lies,

And makes him ready for surprize;  
When roused with a shrill alarm,  
Was shouted from beneath: they arm.

The falcon charges at first view  
With her brigade of talons, through  
Whose shoots, the wary heron beat  
With a well counterwheel'd retreat.  
But the bold gen'ral, never lost,  
Hath won again her airy post;  
Who, wild in this affront, now fryes,  
Then gives a volley of her eyes.

The desp'rate heron now contracts  
In one design all former facts;  
Noble, he is resolv'd to fall,  
His and his en'mies funerall,  
And (to be rid of her) to dy,  
A publick martyr of the sky.

When now he turns his last to wreak  
The palizadoes of his beak,  
The raging foe impatient,  
Wrack'd with revenge, and fury rent,  
Swift as the thunderbolt he strikes  
Too sure upon the stand of pikes;  
There she his naked breast doth hit,  
And on the case of rapiers's split.

But ev'n in her expiring pangs  
The heron's pounc'd within her phangs,  
And so above she stoops to rise,  
A trophee and a sacrifice;  
Whilst her own bells in the sad fall  
Ring out the double funerall.

Ah, victory, unhap'ly wonne!  
Weeping and red is set the Sun;  
Whilst the whole field floats in one tear,  
And all the air doth mourning wear.  
Close-hooded all thy kindred come  
To pay their vows upon thy tombe;  
The hobby<70.2> and the musket<70.3> too  
Do march to take their last adieu.

The lanner<70.4> and the lanneret<70.5>  
Thy colours bear as banneret;  
The GOSHAWK and her TERCEL<70.6> rows'd  
With tears attend thee as new bows'd,  
All these are in their dark array,  
Led by the various herald-jay.

But thy eternal name shall live  
Whilst quills from ashes fame reprieve,  
Whilst open stands renown's wide dore,  
And wings are left on which to soar;  
Doctor robbin, the prelate pye,  
And the poetick swan, shall dye,  
Only to sing thy elegie.

<70.1> i.e. VERVELS. See Halliwell's DICTIONARY OF ARCHAIC AND PROVINCIAL WORDS, art. VERVEL.

<70.2> A kind of falcon. It is the FALCO SUBBUTEO of Linnaeus. Lyly, in his EUPHUES (1579, fol. 28), makes Lucilla say— "No birde can looke agains the Sunne, but those that bee bredde of the eagle, neyther any hawke soare so hie as the broode of the hobbie."

"Then rouse thee, muse, each little hobby plies  
At scarabes and painted butterflies."

Wither's ABUSES STRIPT AND WHIPT, 1613.

<70.3> The young male sparrow-hawk.

<70.4> The FALCO LANIARIUS of Linnaeus.

<70.5> The female of the LANNER. Latham (Faulconrie, lib. ii. chap. v. ed. 1658), explains the difference between the LANNER and the GOSHAWK.

<70.6> Here used for the female of the goshawk. TIERCEL and TASSEL are other forms of the same word. See Strutt's SPORTS AND PASTIMES, ed. Hone, 1845, p. 37.

## LOVE MADE IN THE FIRST AGE.

### TO CHLORIS.

#### I.

In the nativity of time,  
Chloris! it was not thought a crime  
In direct Hebrew for to woe.  
Now wee make love, as all on fire,  
Ring retrograde our lowd desire,  
And court in English backward too.

#### II.

Thrice happy was that golden age,  
When complement was constru'd rage,  
And fine words in the center hid;  
When cursed NO stain'd no maid's blisse,  
And all discourse was summ'd in YES,  
And nought forbad, but to forbid.

#### III.<71.1>

Love then unstinted love did sip,  
And cherries pluck'd fresh from the lip,  
On cheeks and roses free he fed;  
Lasses, like Autumne plums, did drop,  
And lads indifferently did drop  
A flower and a maiden-head.

#### IV.

Then unconfined each did tipple  
Wine from the bunch, milk from the nipple;  
Paps tractable as udders were.  
Then equally the wholesome jellies  
Were squeez'd from olive-trees and bellies:  
Nor suits of trespasse did they fear.

#### V.

A fragrant bank of strawberries,  
Diaper'd with violets' eyes,  
Was table, table-cloth and fare;  
No palace to the clouds did swell,  
Each humble princesse then did dwell  
In the Piazza of her hair.

#### VI.

Both broken faith and th' cause of it,  
All-damning gold, was damn'd to th' pit;  
Their troth seal'd with a clasp and kisse,  
Lasted until that extreem day,  
In which they smil'd their souls away,  
And in each other breath'd new blisse.

## VII.

Because no fault, there was no tear;  
 No grone did grate the granting ear,  
 No false foul breath, their del'cat smell.  
 No serpent kiss poyson'd the tast,  
 Each touch was naturally chast,  
 And their mere Sense a Miracle.

## VIII.

Naked as their own innocence,  
 And unembroyder'd from offence,  
 They went, above poor riches, gay;  
 On softer than the cignet's down,  
 In beds they tumbled off their own:  
 For each within the other lay.

## IX.

Thus did they live: thus did they love,  
 Repeating only joyes above,  
 And angels were but with cloaths on,  
 Which they would put off cheerfully,  
 To bathe them in the Galaxie,  
 Then gird them with the heavenly zone.

## X.

Now, Chloris! miserably crave  
 The offer'd blisse you would not have,  
 Which evermore I must deny:  
 Whilst ravish'd with these noble dreams,  
 And crowned with mine own soft beams,  
 Injoying of my self I lye.

<71.1> This and the succeeding stanza are omitted by Mr. Singer in his reprint.

## TO A LADY WITH CHILD THAT ASK'D AN OLD SHIRT.&lt;72.1&gt;&lt;AN.4&gt;

And why an honour'd ragged shirt, that shows,  
 Like tatter'd ensigs, all its bodie's blows?  
 Should it be swathed in a vest so dire,  
 It were enough to set the child on fire;  
 Dishevell'd queen[s] should strip them of their hair,  
 And in it mantle the new rising heir:  
 Nor do I know ought worth to wrap it in,  
 Except my parchment upper-coat of skin;  
 And then expect no end of its chast tears,  
 That first was rowl'd in down, now furs of bears.

But since to ladies 't hath a custome been  
 Linnen to send, that travail and lye in;  
 To the nine sempstresses, my former friends,  
 I su'd; but they had nought but shreds and ends.  
 At last, the jolli'st of the three times three  
 Rent th' apron from her smock, and gave it me;  
 'Twas soft and gentle, subt'ly spun, no doubt;  
 Pardon my boldnese, madam; HERE'S THE CLOUT.

<72.1> A portion of this little poem is quoted in Brand's POPULAR ANTIQUITIES (edit. 1849, ii. 70), as an illustration of the custom to which it refers. No second example of such an usage seems to have been known to Brand and his editors.

<<AN.4>> P. 183. TO A LADY WITH CHILDE THAT ASK'T AN OLD SHIRT. The custom to which the Poet here refers, was no doubt common in his time; although the indefatigable Brand does not appear to have met with any illustration of it, except in LUCASTA. But since the note at p. 183 <i.e. note 72.1> was written, the following passage in the old morality of THE MARRIAGE OF WIT AND WISDOM (circa 1570) has come under my notice:—

"INDULGENCE [to her son WIT].  
Well, yet before the goest, hold heare  
MY BLESSING IN A CLOUTE,  
WELL FARE THE MOTHER AT A NEEDE,  
Stand to thy tackling stout."

The allusion is to the contemplated marriage of WIT to his betrothed, WISDOM.

## SONG.

### I.

In mine one monument I lye,  
And in my self am buried;  
Sure, the quick lightning of her eye  
Melted my soul ith' scabberd dead;  
And now like some pale ghost I walk,  
And with another's spirit talk.

### II.

Nor can her beams a heat convey,  
That may my frozen bosome warm,  
Unless her smiles have pow'r, as they,  
That a cross charm can countercharm.  
But this is such a pleasing pain,  
I'm loth to be alive again.

## ANOTHER.

I did believe I was in heav'n,  
When first the heav'n her self was giv'n,  
That in my heart her beams did passe  
As some the sun keep in a glasse,  
So that her beauties thorow me  
Did hurt my rival-enemy.  
But fate, alas! decreed it so,  
That I was engine to my woe:  
For, as a corner'd christal spot,  
My heart diaphanous was not;  
But solid stufte, where her eye flings  
Quick fire upon the catching strings:  
Yet, as at triumphs in the night,  
You see the Prince's Arms in light,  
So, when I once was set on flame,  
I burnt all ore the letters of her name.

## ODE.

### I.

You are deceiv'd; I sooner may, dull fair,  
Seat a dark Moor in Cassiopea's<sup><73.1></sup> chair,  
Or on the glow-worm's uselesse light  
Bestow the watching flames of night,  
Or give the rose's breath  
To executed death,  
Ere the bright hiew  
Of verse to you;  
It is just Heaven on beauty stamps a fame,  
And we, alas! its triumphs but proclaim.

### II.

What chains but are too light for me, should I

Say that Lucasta in strange arms could lie?  
Or that Castara<73.2> were impure;  
Or Saccarisa's<73.3> faith unsure?  
That Chloris' love, as hair,  
Embrac'd each en'mies air;  
That all their good  
Ran in their blood?  
'Tis the same wrong th' unworthy to inthrone,  
As from her proper sphere t' have vertue thrown.

III.

That strange force on the ignoble hath renown;  
As AURUM FULMINANS, it blows vice down.  
'Twere better (heavy one) to crawl  
Forgot, then raised, trod on [to] fall.  
All your defections now  
Are not writ on your brow;  
Odes to faults give  
A shame must live.  
When a fat mist we view, we coughing run;  
But, that once meteor drawn, all cry: undone.

IV.

How bright the fair Paulina<73.4> did appear,  
When hid in jewels she did seem a star!  
But who could soberly behold  
A wicked owl in cloath of gold,  
Or the ridiculous Ape  
In sacred Vesta's shape?  
So doth agree  
Just praise with thee:  
For since thy birth gave thee no beauty, know,  
No poets pencil must or can do so.

<73.1> The constellation so called. In old drawings Cassiopeia is represented as a woman sitting in a chair with a branch in her hand, and hence the allusion here. Dixon, in his CANIDIA, 1683, part i. p. 35, makes his witches say:—

"We put on Berenice's hair,  
And sit in Cassiopeia's chair."

Randolph couples it with "Ariadne's Crowne" in the following passage:—

"Shine forth a constellation, full and bright,  
Bless the poor heavens with more majestick light,  
Who in requitall shall present you there  
ARIADNE'S CROWNE and CASSIOPEIA'S CHAYR."  
POEMS, ed. 1640, p. 14.

<73.2> William Habington published his poems under the name of CASTARA, a fictitious appellation signifying the daughter of Lord Powis. This lady was eventually his wife. The first edition of CASTARA appeared in 1634, the second in 1635, and the third in 1640.

<73.3> Waller's SACHARISSA, i.e. Lady Dorothy Sydney.

<73.4> Lollia Paulina, who first married Memmius Regulus, and subsequently the Emperor Caligula, from both of whom she was divorced. She inherited from her father enormous wealth.

## THE DUELL.

I.

Love drunk, the other day, knockt at my brest,  
But I, alas! was not within.  
My man, my ear, told me he came t' attest,  
That without cause h'd boxed him,

And battered the windows of mine eyes,  
And took my heart for one of's nunneries.

II.

I wondred at the outrage safe return'd,  
And storm'd at the base affront;  
And by a friend of mine, bold faith, that burn'd,  
I called him to a strict accompt.  
He said that, by the law, the challeng'd might  
Take the advantage both of arms and fight.

III.

Two darts of equal length and points he sent,  
And nobly gave the choyce to me,  
Which I not weigh'd, young and indifferent,  
Now full of nought but victorie.  
So we both met in one of's mother's groves,  
The time, at the first murm'ring of her doves.

IV.

I stript myself naked all o're, as he:  
For so I was best arm'd, when bare.  
His first pass did my liver rase: yet I  
Made home a falsify<74.1> too neer:  
For when my arm to its true distance came,  
I nothing touch'd but a fantastick flame.

V.

This, this is love we daily quarrel so,  
An idle Don-Quichoterie:  
We whip our selves with our own twisted wo,  
And wound the ayre for a fly.  
The only way t' undo this enemy  
Is to laugh at the boy, and he will cry.

<74.1> "To falsify a thrust," says Phillips (WORLD OF WORDS, ed. 1706, art. FALSIFY), "is to make a feigned pass." Lovelace here employs the word as a substantive rather awkwardly; but the meaning is, no doubt, the same.

## CUPID FAR GONE.

I.

What, so beyond all madnesse is the elf,  
Now he hath got out of himself!  
His fatal enemy the Bee,  
Nor his deceiv'd artillerie,  
His shackles, nor the roses bough  
Ne'r half so netled him, as he is now.

II.<75.1>

See! at's own mother he is offering;  
His finger now fits any ring;  
Old Cybele he would enjoy,  
And now the girl, and now the boy.  
He proffers Jove a back caresse,  
And all his love in the antipodes.

III.

Jealous of his chast Psyche, raging he  
Quarrels with<75.2> student Mercurie,  
And with a proud submissive breath  
Offers to change his darts with Death.  
He strikes at the bright eye of day,  
And Juno tumbles in her milky way.



IV.

The dear sweet secrets of the gods he tells,  
And with loath'd hate lov'd heaven he swells;  
Now, like a fury, he belies  
Myriads of pure virginities,  
And swears, with this false frenzy hurl'd,  
There's not a vertuous she in all the world.

V.

Olympus he renownces, then descends,  
And makes a friendship with the fiends;  
Bids Charon be no more a slave,  
He Argos rigg'd with stars shall have,  
And triple Cerberus from below  
Must leash'd t' himself with him a hunting go.

<75.1> This stanza was suppressed by Mr. Singer.

<75.2> Original reads THE.

A MOCK SONG.

I.

Now Whitehall's in the grave,  
And our head is our slave,  
The bright pearl in his close shell of oyster;  
Now the miter is lost,  
The proud Praelates, too, crost,  
And all Rome's confin'd to a cloister.  
He, that Tarquin was styl'd,  
Our white land's exil'd,  
Yea, undefil'd;  
Not a court ape's left to confute us;  
Then let your voyces rise high,  
As your colours did flye,  
And flour'shing cry:  
Long live the brave Oliver-Brutus.<76.1>

II.

Now the sun is unarm'd,  
And the moon by us charm'd,  
All the stars dissolv'd to a jelly;  
Now the thighs of the Crown  
And the arms are lopp'd down,  
And the body is all but a belly.  
Let the Commons go on,  
The town is our own,  
We'l rule alone:  
For the Knights have yielded their spent-gorge;  
And an order is tane  
With HONY SOIT profane,  
Shout forth amain:  
For our Dragon hath vanquish'd the St. George.

<76.1> Cromwell.

A FLY CAUGHT IN A COBWEB.

Small type of great ones, that do hum  
Within this whole world's narrow room,  
That with a busie hollow noise  
Catch at the people's vainer voice,  
And with spread sails play with their breath,

Whose very hails new christen death.  
Poor Fly, caught in an airy net,  
Thy wings have fetter'd now thy feet;  
Where, like a Lyon in a toyl,  
Howere thou keep'st a noble coyl,  
And beat'st thy gen'rous breast, that o're  
The plains thy fatal buzzes rore,  
Till thy all-bellyd foe (round elf<77.1>)  
Hath quarter'd thee within himself.

Was it not better once to play  
I' th' light of a majestick ray,  
Where, though too neer and bold, the fire  
Might sindge thy upper down attire,  
And thou i' th' storm to loose an eye.  
A wing, or a self-trapping thigh:  
Yet hadst thou fal'n like him, whose coil  
Made fishes in the sea to broyl,  
When now th'ast scap'd the noble flame;  
Trapp'd basely in a slimy frame,  
And free of air, thou art become  
Slave to the spawn of mud and lome?

Nor is't enough thy self do's dresse  
To thy swoln lord a num'rous messe,  
And by degrees thy thin veins bleed,  
And piecemeal dost his poyson feed;  
But now devour'd, art like to be  
A net spun for thy familie,  
And, straight expanded in the air,  
Hang'st for thy issue too a snare.  
Strange witty death and cruel ill  
That, killing thee, thou thine dost kill!  
Like pies, in whose entombed ark  
All fowl crowd downward to a lark,  
Thou art thine en'mies' sepulcher,  
And in thee buriest, too, thine heir.

Yet Fates a glory have reserv'd  
For one so highly hath deserv'd.  
As the rhinoceros doth dy  
Under his castle-enemy,  
As through the cranes trunk throat doth speed,  
The aspe doth on his feeder feed;  
Fall yet triumphant in thy woe,  
Bound with the entrails of thy foe.

<77.1> The spider.

## A FLY ABOUT A GLASSE OF BURNT CLARET.

### I.

Forbear this liquid fire, Fly,  
It is more fatal then the dry,  
That singly, but embracing, wounds;  
And this at once both burns and drowns.

### II.

The salamander, that in heat  
And flames doth cool his monstrous sweat,  
Whose fan a glowing cake is said,  
Of this red furnace is afraid.

### III.

Viewing the ruby-christal shine,

Thou tak'st it for heaven-christalline;  
Anon thou wilt be taught to groan:  
'Tis an ascended Acheron.

IV.

A snow-ball heart in it let fall,  
And take it out a fire-ball;  
Ali icy breast in it betray'd  
Breaks a destructive wild granade.

V.

'Tis this makes Venus altars shine,  
This kindles frosty Hymen's pine;  
When the boy grows old in his desires,  
This flambeau doth new light his fires.

VI.

Though the cold hermit over wail,  
Whose sighs do freeze, and tears drop hail,  
Once having pass'd this, will ne'r  
Another flaming purging fear.

VII.

The vestal drinking this doth burn  
Now more than in her fun'ral urn;  
Her fires, that with the sun kept race,  
Are now extinguish'd by her face.

VIII.

The chymist, that himself doth still, <78.1>  
Let him but tast this limbecks <78.2> bill,  
And prove this sublimated bowl,  
He'll swear it will calcine a soul.

IX.

Noble, and brave! now thou dost know  
The false prepared decks below,  
Dost thou the fatal liquor sup,  
One drop, alas! thy barque blowes up.

X.

What airy country hast to save,  
Whose plagues thou'lt bury in thy grave?  
For even now thou seem'st to us  
On this gulphs brink a Curtius.

XI.

And now th' art faln (magnanimous Fly)  
In, where thine Ocean doth fry,  
Like the Sun's son, who blush'd the flood  
To a complexion of blood.

XII.

Yet, see! my glad auricular  
Redeems thee (though dissolv'd) a star,  
Flaggy <78.3> thy wings, and scorch'd thy thighs,  
Thou ly'st a double sacrifice.

XIII.

And now my warming, cooling breath  
Shall a new life afford in death;  
See! in the hospital of my hand  
Already cur'd, thou fierce do'st stand.

XIV.

Burnt insect! dost thou reaspire  
The moist-hot-glasse and liquid fire?

I see 'tis such a pleasing pain,  
Thou would'st be scorch'd and drown'd again.

<78.1> i.e. distil.

<78.2> Lovelace was by no means peculiar in the fondness which he has shown in this poem and elsewhere for figures drawn from the language of alchemy.

"Retire into thy grove of eglantine,  
Where I will all those ravished sweets distill  
Through Love's alembic, and with chemic skill  
From the mix'd mass one sovereign balm derive."  
Carew's POEMS (1640), ed. 1772, p. 77.

"—I will try  
From the warm limbeck of my eye,  
In such a method to distil  
Tears on thy marble nature—"  
Shirley's POEMS (Works by Dyce, vi. 407).

"Nature's Confectioner, the BEE,  
Whose suckers are moist ALCHYMIE,  
The still of his refining Mould,  
Minting the garden into gold."  
Cleveland's POEMS, ed. 1669, p. 4.

"Fisher is here with purple wing,  
Who brings me to the Spring-head, where  
Crystall is Lymbeckt all the year."  
Lord Westmoreland's OTIA SACRA, 1648, p. 137,

<78.3> WEAK. The word was once not very uncommon in writings. Bacon, Spenser, &c. use it; but it is now, I believe, confined to Somersetshire and the bordering counties.

"LUKE. A south wind  
Shall sooner soften marble, and the rain,  
That slides down gently from his flaggy wings,  
O'erflow the Alps."  
Massinger's CITY MADAM, 1658.

## FEMALE GLORY.

Mongst the worlds wonders, there doth yet remain  
One greater than the rest, that's all those o're again,  
And her own self beside: A Lady, whose soft breast  
Is with vast honours soul and virtues life possest.  
Fair as original light first from the chaos shot,  
When day in virgin-beams triumph'd, and night was not,  
And as that breath infus'd in the new-breather good,  
When ill unknown was dumb, and bad not understood;  
Chearful, as that aspect at this world's finishing,  
When cherubims clapp'd wings, and th' sons of Heaven did sing;  
Chast as th' Arabian bird, who all the ayr denies,<79.1>  
And ev'n in flames expires, when with her selfe she lyes.  
Oh! she's as kind as drops of new faln April showers,  
That on each gentle breast spring fresh perfuming flowers;  
She's constant, gen'rous, fixt; she's calm, she is the all  
We can of vertue, honour, faith, or glory call,  
And she is (whom I thus transmit to endless fame)  
Mistresse oth' world and me, and LAURA is her name.

<79.1> The Phoenix.

## A DIALOGUE. LUTE AND VOICE.

L. Sing, Laura, sing, whilst silent are the spears,  
And all the eyes of Heaven are turn'd to ears.

V. Touch thy dead wood, and make each living tree  
Unchain its feet, take arms, and follow thee.

CHORUS.

L. Sing. V. Touch. O Touch. L. O Sing.

BOTH. It is the souls, souls sole offering.

V. Touch the divinity of thy chords, and make  
Each heart string tremble, and each sinew shake.

L. Whilst with your voyce you rarifie the air,  
None but an host of angels hover here.

CHORUS. SING, TOUCH, &c.

V. Touch thy soft lute, and in each gentle thread  
The lyon and the panther captive lead.

L. Sing, and in heav'n inthroned love,  
Whilst angels dance, and fiends in order move.

DOUBLE CHORUS.

What sacred charm may this then be

In harmonie,

That thus can make the angels wild,

The devils mild,

And teach low hell to heav'n to swell,

And the high heav'n to stoop to hell?

<80.1> Original and Singer read REACH.

A MOCK CHARON.

DIALOGUE.

CHA. W.

W. Charon! thou slave! thou fooll! thou cavaleer! <81.1>

CHA. A slave! a fool! what traitor's voice I hear?

W. Come bring thy boat. CH. No, sir. W. No! sirrah, why?

CHA. The blest will disagree, and fiends will mutiny

At thy, at thy [un]numbred treachery.

W. Villain, I have a pass which who disdains,

I will sequester the Elizian plains.

CHA. Woes me, ye gentle shades! where shall I dwell?

He's come! It is not safe to be in hell.

CHORUS.

Thus man, his honor lost, falls on these shelves;

Furies and fiends are still true to themselves.

CHA. You must, lost fool, come in. W. Oh, let me in!

But now I fear thy boat will sink with my ore-weighty sin.

Where, courteous Charon, am I now? CHA. Vile rant! <81.2>

At the gates of thy supreme Judge Rhadamant.

DOUBLE CHORUS OF DIVELS.

Welcome to rape, to theft, to perjurie,

To all the ills thou wert, we cannot hope to be;

Oh, pitty us condemned! Oh, cease to woove,

And softly, softly breath, least you infect us too.

<81.1> This word is used here merely to denote a GALLANT, a FELLOW. From being in its primitive sense a most honourable appellation, it became, during and after the civil war between Charles and the

Parliament, a term of equivocal import.

<81.2> Here equivalent to RANTER, and used for the sake of the metre.

## THE TOAD AND SPYDER.

### A DUELL.

Upon a day, when the Dog-star  
Unto the world proclaim'd a war,  
And poyson bark'd from black throat,  
And from his jaws infection shot,  
Under a deadly hen-bane shade  
With slime infernal mists are made,  
Met the two dreaded enemies,  
Having their weapons in their eyes.

First from his den rolls forth that load  
Of spite and hate, the speckl'd toad,  
And from his chaps a foam doth spawn,  
Such as the loathed three heads yawn;  
Defies his foe with a fell spit,  
To wade through death to meet with it;  
Then in his self the lymbeck turns,  
And his elixir'd poyson urns.  
Arachne, once the fear oth' maid<82.1>  
Coelestial, thus unto her pray'd:  
Heaven's blew-ey'd daughter, thine own mother!  
The Python-killing Sun's thy brother.  
Oh! thou, from gods that didst descend,  
With a poor virgin to contend,  
Shall seed of earth and hell ere be  
A rival in thy victorie?  
Pallas assents: for now long time  
And pity had clean rins'd her crime;  
When straight she doth with active fire  
Her many legged foe inspire.  
Have you not seen a charact<82.2> lie  
A great cathedral in the sea,  
Under whose Babylonian walls  
A small thin frigot almshouse stalls?  
So in his slime the toad doth float  
And th' spyder by, but seems his boat.  
And now the naumachie<82.3> begins;  
Close to the surface her self spins:  
Arachne, when her foe lets flye  
A broad-side of his breath too high,  
That's over-shot, the wisely-stout,  
Advised maid doth tack about;  
And now her pitchy barque doth sweat,  
Chaf'd in her own black fury wet;  
Lasie and cold before, she brings  
New fires to her contracted stings,  
And with discolour'd spumes doth blast  
The herbs that to their center hast.  
Now to the neighb'ring henbane top  
Arachne hath her self wound up,  
And thence, from its dilated leaves,  
By her own cordage downwards weaves,  
And doth her town of foe attack, <82.4>  
And storms the rampiers<82.5> of his back;  
Which taken in her colours spread,  
March to th' citadel of's head.

Now as in witty torturing Spain,  
The brain is vex to vex the brain,  
Where hereticks bare heads are arm'd  
In a close helm, and in it charm'd  
An overgrown and meagre rat,  
That peece-meal nibbles himself fat;  
So on the toads blew-hecker'd scull  
The spider gluttons her self full.  
And vomiting her Stygian seeds,  
Her poyson on his poyson feeds.  
Thus the invenom'd toad, now grown  
Big with more poyson than his own,  
Doth gather all his pow'rs, and shakes  
His stormer in's disgorged lakes;  
And wounded now, apace crawls on  
To his next plantane surgeon, <82.6>  
With whose rich balm no sooner drest,  
But purged is his sick swoln breast;  
And as a glorious combatant,  
That only rests awhile to pant,  
Then with repeated strength and scars,  
That smarting fire him new to wars,  
Deals blows that thick themselves prevent,  
As they would gain the time he spent.

So the disdainful angry toad,  
That calls but a thin useless load,  
His fatal feared self comes back  
With unknown venome fill'd to crack.  
Th' amas'd spider, now untwin'd,  
Hath crept up, and her self new lin'd  
With fresh salt foams and mists, that blast  
The ambient air as they past.  
And now me thinks a Sphynx's wing  
I pluck, and do not write, but sting;  
With their black blood my pale inks blent, <82.7>  
Gall's but a faint ingredient.  
The pol'tick toad doth now withdraw,  
Warn'd, higher in CAMPANIA. <82.8>  
There wisely doth, intrenched deep,  
His body in a body keep,  
And leaves a wide and open pass  
T' invite the foe up to his jaws,  
Which there within a foggy blind  
With fourscore fire-arms were lin'd.  
The gen'rous active spider doubts  
More ambuscadoes than redoubts;  
So within shot she doth pickear, <82.9>  
Now gall's the flank, and now the rear;  
As that <82.10> the toad in's own despite  
Must change the manner of his fight,  
Who, like a glorious general,  
With one home-charge lets fly at all.  
Chaf'd with a fourfold ven'mous foam  
Of scorn, revenge, his foes and 's own,  
He seats him in his loathed chair,  
New-made him by each mornings air,  
With glowing eyes he doth survey  
Th' undaunted hoast he calls his prey;  
Then his dark spume he gred'ly laps,  
And shows the foe his grave, his chaps.

Whilst the quick wary Amazon  
Of 'vantage takes occasion,  
And with her troop of leggs carreers

In a full speed with all her speers.  
Down (as some mountain on a mouse)  
On her small cot he flings his house;  
Without the poyson of the elf,  
The toad had like t' have burst himself:  
For sage Arachne with good heed  
Had stopt herself upon full speed,  
And, 's body now disorder'd, on  
She falls to execution.  
The passive toad now only can  
Contemn and suffer. Here began  
The wronged maids ingenious rage,  
Which his heart venome must asswage.  
One eye she hath spet out, strange smother,  
When one flame doth put out another,  
And one eye wittily spar'd, that he  
Might but behold his miserie.  
She on each spot a wound doth print,  
And each speck hath a sting within't;  
Till he but one new blister is,  
And swells his own periphrasis.  
Then fainting, sick, and yellow-pale,  
She baths him with her sulph'rous stale;  
Thus slacked is her Stygian fire,  
And she vouchsafes now to retire.  
Anon the toad begins to pant,  
Bethinks him of th' almighty plant,  
And lest he peece-meal should be sped,  
Wisely doth finish himself dead.  
Whilst the gay girl, as was her fate,  
Doth wanton and luxuriate,  
And crowns her conqu'ring head all or  
With fatal leaves of hellebore.  
Not guessing at the pretious aid  
Was lent her by the heavenly maid.  
The neer expiring toad now rowls  
Himself in lazy bloody scrowls,  
To th' sov'raign salve of all his ills,  
That only life and health distills.  
But loe! a terror above all,  
That ever yet did him befall!

Pallas, still mindful of her foe,  
(Whilst they did with each fires glow)  
Had to the place the spiders lar  
Dispath'd before the ev'nings star.  
He learned was in Natures laws,  
Of all her foliage knew the cause,  
And 'mongst the rest in his choice want  
Unplanted had this plantane plant.

The all-confounded toad doth see  
His life fled with his remedie,  
And in a glorious despair  
First burst himself, and next the air;  
Then with a dismal horred yell  
Beats down his loathsome breath to hell.

But what inestimable bliss  
This to the sated virgin is,  
Who, as before of her fiend foe,  
Now full is of her goddess too!  
She from her fertile womb hath spun  
Her stateliest pavillion,  
Whilst all her silken flags display,



And her triumphant banners play;  
Where Pallas she ith' midst doth praise,  
And counterfeits her brothers rayes,  
Nor will she her dear lar forget,  
Victorious by his benefit,  
Whose roof enchanted she doth free  
From haunting gnat and goblin bee,  
Who, trapp'd in her prepared toyle,  
To their destruction keep a coyle.

Then she unlocks the toad's dire head,  
Within whose cell is treasured  
That pretious stone, which she doth call  
A noble recompence for all,  
And to her lar doth it present,  
Of his fair aid a monument.

<82.1> It will be seen that this poem partly turns on the mythological tale of Arachne and Minerva, and the metamorphosis of the former by the angry goddess into a spider (<<arachne>>).

<82.2> i.e. CARAK, or CARRICK, as the word is variously spelled. This large kind of ship was much used by the Greeks and Venetians during the middle ages, and also by other nations.

<82.3> The poet rather awkwardly sustains his simile, and employs, in expressing a contest between the toad and the spider, a term signifying a naval battle, or, at least, a fight between two ships.

<82.4> Lovelace's fondness for military similitudes is constantly standing in the way, and marring his attempts at poetical imagery.

<82.5> A form of RAMPART, sanctioned by Dryden.

<82.6> Medicinal herb or plant.

<82.7> Blended.

<82.8> CAMPANIA may signify, in the present passage, either a field or the country generally, or a plain. It is a clumsy expression.

<82.9> In the sense in which it is here used this word seems to be peculiar to Lovelace. TO PICKEAR, or PICKEER, means TO SKIRMISH.

<82.10> So that.

## THE SNAYL.

Wise emblem of our politick world,  
Sage Snayl, within thine own self curl'd,  
Instruct me softly to make hast,  
Whilst these my feet go slowly fast.

Compendious Snayl! thou seem'st to me  
Large Euclid's strict epitome;  
And in each diagram dost fling  
Thee from the point unto the ring.  
A figure now triangulare,  
An oval now, and now a square,  
And then a serpentine, dost crawl,  
Now a straight line, now crook'd, now all.

Preventing<83.1> rival of the day,  
Th' art up and openest thy ray;  
And ere the morn cradles the moon,<83.2>  
Th' art broke into a beauteous noon.  
Then, when the Sun sups in the deep,  
Thy silver horns e're Cinthia's peep;  
And thou, from thine own liquid bed,

New Phoebus, heav'st thy pleasant head.

Who shall a name for thee create,  
Deep riddle of mysterious state?  
Bold Nature, that gives common birth  
To all products of seas and earth,  
Of thee, as earth-quakes, is afraid,  
Nor will thy dire deliv'ry aid.

Thou, thine own daughter, then, and sire,  
That son and mother art intire,  
That big still with thy self dost go,  
And liv'st an aged embrio;  
That like the cubbs of India,  
Thou from thy self a while dost play;  
But frighted with a dog or gun,  
In thine own belly thou dost run,  
And as thy house was thine own womb,  
So thine own womb concludes thy tomb.

But now I must (analys'd king)  
Thy oeconomick virtues sing;  
Thou great stay'd husband still within,  
Thou thee that's thine dost discipline;  
And when thou art to progress bent,  
Thou mov'st thy self and tenement,  
As warlike Scythians travayl'd, you  
Remove your men and city too;  
Then, after a sad dearth and rain,  
Thou scatterest thy silver train;  
And when the trees grow nak'd and old,  
Thou cloathest them with cloth of gold,  
Which from thy bowels thou dost spin,  
And draw from the rich mines within.

Now hast thou chang'd thee, saint, and made  
Thy self a fane that's cupula'd;  
And in thy wreathed cloister thou  
Walkest thine own gray fryer too;  
Strickt and lock'd up, th'art hood all ore,  
And ne'r eliminat'st thy dore.  
On sallads thou dost feed severe,  
And 'stead of beads thou drop'st a tear,  
And when to rest each calls the bell,  
Thou sleep'st within thy marble cell,  
Where, in dark contemplation plac'd,  
The sweets of Nature thou dost tast,  
Who now with time thy days resolve,  
And in a jelly thee dissolve,  
Like a shot star, which doth repair  
Upward, and rarifie the air.

<83.1> Anticipating, forerunning.

<83.2> It can scarcely be requisite to mention that Lovelace refers to the gradual evanescence of the moon before the growing daylight. It is well known that the lunar orb is, at certain times, visible sometime even after sunrise.

ANOTHER.

The Centaur, Syren, I foregoe;  
Those have been sung, and lowdly too:  
Nor of the mixed Sphynx Ile write,  
Nor the renown'd Hermaphrodite.  
Behold! this huddle doth appear

Of horses, coach and charioteer,  
That moveth him by traverse law,  
And doth himself both drive and draw;  
Then, when the Sunn the south doth winne,  
He baits him hot in his own inne.  
I heard a grave and austere clark  
Resolv'd him pilot both and barque;  
That, like the fam'd ship of TREVERE,  
Did on the shore himself lavere:  
Yet the authentick do beleeve,  
Who keep their judgement in their sleeve,  
That he is his own double man,  
And sick still carries his sedan:  
Or that like dames i'th land of Luyck,  
He wears his everlasting huyck.<84.1>  
But banisht, I admire his fate,  
Since neither ostracisme of state,  
Nor a perpetual exile,  
Can force this virtue, change his soyl:  
For, wheresoever he doth go,  
He wanders with his country too.

<84.1> i.q. HUKÉ. "Huke," says Minshen, "is a mantle such as women use in Spaine, Germanie, and the Low Countries, when they goe abroad." Lovelace clearly adopts the word for the sake of the metre; otherwise he might have chosen a better one.

## THE TRIUMPHS OF PHILAMORE AND AMORET.

TO THE NOBLEST OF OUR YOUTH AND BEST OF FRIENDS,  
CHARLES COTTON, Esquire.<85.1>

**BEING AT BERISFORD, AT HIS HOUSE IN STAFFORDSHIRE. FROM LONDON.**

### A POEM.

Sir, your sad absence I complain, as earth  
Her long-hid spring, that gave her verdures birth,  
Who now her cheerful aromattick head  
Shrinks in her cold and dismal widow'd bed;  
Whilst the false sun her lover doth him move  
Below, and to th' antipodes make love.

What fate was mine, when in mine obscure cave  
(Shut up almost close prisoner in a grave)  
Your beams could reach me through this vault of night,  
And canton the dark dungeon with light!  
Whence me (as gen'rous Spahys) you unbound,  
Whilst I now know my self both free and crown'd.

But as at Meccha's tombe, the devout blind  
Pilgrim (great husband of his sight and mind)  
Pays to no other object this chast prise,  
Then with hot earth anynts out both his eyes:  
So having seen your dazling glories store,  
It is enough, and sin for to see more.

Or, do you thus those pretious rayes withdraw  
To whet my dull beams, keep my bold in aw?  
Or, are you gentle and compassionate,  
You will not reach me Regulus his fate?  
Brave prince! who, eagle-ey'd of eagle kind,  
Wert blindly damn'd to look thine own self blind!

But oh, return those fires, too cruel-nice!  
For whilst you fear me cindars, see, I'm ice!

A nummed speaking clod and mine own show, <85.2>  
My self congeal'd, a man cut out in snow:  
Return those living fires. Thou, who that vast  
Double advantage from one-ey'd Heav'n hast,  
Look with one sun, though 't but obliquely be,  
And if not shine, vouchsafe to wink on me.

Perceive you not a gentle, gliding heat,  
And quick'ning warmth, that makes the statua sweat;  
As rev'rend Ducaleon's black-flung stone,  
Whose rough outside softens to skin, anon  
Each crusty vein with wet red is suppli'd,  
Whilst nought of stone but in its heart doth 'bide.

So from the rugged north, where your soft stay  
Hath stamp't them a meridian and kind day;  
Where now each A LA MODE inhabitant  
Himself and 's manners both do pay you rent,  
And 'bout your house (your pallace) doth resort,  
And 'spite of fate and war creates a court.

So from the taught north, when you shall return,  
To glad those looks that ever since did mourn,  
When men uncloathed of themselves you'l see,  
Then start new made, fit, what they ought to be;  
Hast! hast! you, that your eyes on rare sights feed:  
For thus the golden triumph is decreed.

The twice-born god, still gay and ever young,  
With ivie crown'd, first leads the glorious throng:  
He Ariadne's starry coronet  
Designs for th' brighter beams of Amoret;  
Then doth he broach his throne, and singing quaff  
Unto her health his pipe of god-head off.

Him follow the recanting, vexing Nine  
Who, wise, now sing thy lasting fame in wine;  
Whilst Phoebus, not from th' east, your feast t' adorn,  
But from th' inspir'd Canaries, rose this morn.

Now you are come, winds in their caverns sit,  
And nothing breaths, but new-inlarged wit.  
Hark! One proclaims it piacle <85.3> to be sad,  
And th' people call 't religion to be mad.

But now, as at a coronation,  
When noyse, the guard, and trumpets are oreblown,  
The silent commons mark their princes way,  
And with still reverence both look and pray;  
So they amaz'd expecting do adore,  
And count the rest but pageantry before.

Behold! an hoast of virgins, pure as th' air  
In her first face, <85.4> ere mists durst vayl her hair:  
Their snowy vests, white as their whiter skin,  
Or their far chaster whiter thoughts within:  
Roses they breath'd and strew'd, as if the fine  
Heaven did to earth his wreath of swets resign;  
They sang aloud: "THRICE, OH THRICE HAPPY, THEY  
THAT CAN, LIKE THESE, IN LOVE BOTH YIELD AND SWAY."

Next herald Fame (a purple clowd her bears),  
In an imbroider'd coat of eyes and ears,  
Proclaims the triumph, and these lovers glory,  
Then in a book of steel records the story.

And now a youth of more than god-like form

Did th' inward minds of the dumb throng alarm;  
All nak'd, each part betray'd unto the eye,  
Chastly: for neither sex ow'd he or she.  
And this was heav'nly love. By his bright hand,  
A boy of worse than earthly stuff did stand;  
His bow broke, his fires out, and his wings clipt,  
And the black slave from all his false flames stript;  
Whose eyes were new-restor'd but to confesse  
This day's bright blisse, and his own wretchednesse;  
Who, swell'd with envy, bursting with disdain,  
Did cry to cry, and weep them out again.

And now what heav'n must I invade, what sphere  
Rifle of all her stars, t' inthroner there?  
No! Phoebus, by thy boys<85.5> fate we beware  
Th' unruly flames o'th' firebrand, thy carr;  
Although, she there once plac'd, thou, Sun, shouldst see  
Thy day both nobler governed and thee.  
Drive on, Bootes, thy cold heavy wayn,  
Then grease thy wheels with amber in the main,  
And Neptune, thou to thy false Thetis gallop,  
Appollo's set within thy bed of scallop:  
Whilst Amoret, on the reconciled winds  
Mounted, and drawn by six caelestial minds,  
She armed was with innocence and fire,  
That did not burn; for it was chaste desire;  
Whilst a new light doth gild the standers by.  
Behold! it was a day shot from her eye;  
Chafing perfumes oth' East did throng and sweat,  
But by her breath they melting back were beat.  
A crown of yet-nere-lighted stars she wore,  
In her soft hand a bleeding heart she bore,  
And round her lay of broken millions more;<85.6>  
Then a wing'd crier thrice aloud did call:  
LET FAME PROCLAIM THIS ONE GREAT PRISE FOR ALL.

By her a lady that might be call'd fair,  
And justly, but that Amoret was there,  
Was pris'ner led; th' unvalued robe she wore  
Made infinite lay lovers to adore,  
Who vainly tempt her rescue (madly bold)  
Chained in sixteen thousand links of gold;  
Chrysetta thus (loaden with treasures) slave  
Did strow the pass with pearls, and her way pave.

But loe! the glorious cause of all this high  
True heav'nly state, brave Philamore, draws nigh,  
Who, not himself, more seems himself to be,  
And with a sacred extasie doth see!  
Fix'd and unmov'd on 's pillars he doth stay,  
And joy transforms him his own statua;  
Nor hath he pow'r to breath [n]or strength to greet  
The gentle offers of his Amoret,  
Who now amaz'd at 's noble breast doth knock,  
And with a kiss his gen'rous heart unlock;  
Whilst she and the whole pomp doth enter there,  
Whence her nor Time nor Fate shall ever tear.  
But whether am I hurl'd? ho! back! awake  
From thy glad trance: to thine old sorrow take!  
Thus, after view of all the Indies store,  
The slave returns unto his chain and oar;  
Thus poets, who all night in blest heav'ns dwell,  
Are call'd next morn to their true living hell;  
So I unthrifty, to myself untrue,  
Rise cloath'd with real wants, 'cause wanting you,

And what substantial riches I possesse,  
I must to these unvalued dreams confesse.

But all our clouds shall be oreblown, when thee  
In our horizon bright once more we see;  
When thy dear presence shall our souls new-dress,  
And spring an universal cheerfulness;  
When we shall be orewhelm'd in joy, like they  
That change their night for a vast half-year's day.

Then shall the wretched few, that do repine,  
See and recant their blasphemies in wine;  
Then shall they grieve, that thought I've sung too free,  
High and aloud of thy true worth and thee,  
And their fowl heresies and lips submit  
To th' all-forgiving breath of Amoret;  
And me alone their angers object call,  
That from my height so miserably did fall;  
And crie out my invention thin and poor,  
Who have said nought, since I could say no more.

<85.1> Charles Cotton the younger, Walton's friend. He was born on the 28th of April, 1630. He married, in 1656, Isabella, daughter of Sir Thomas Hutchinson, of Owthorp, co. Notts, Knight. See Walton's ANGLER, ed. 1760, where a life of Cotton, compiled from the notes of the laborious Oldys, will be found. The poet died in 1687, and, two years later, his miscellaneous verses were printed in an octavo volume.

<85.2> i.e. the shadow of myself.

<85.3> A crime, from the Latin PIACULUM which, from meaning properly AN ATONEMENT, was afterwards used to express WHAT REQUIRED an atonement, i.e. an offence or sin.

<85.4> The sky in the early part of the morning, before it is clouded by mists.

<85.5> Phaeton.

<85.6> Original reads, OF MILLIONS BROKEN MORE. The above is certainly preferable; but the reader may judge for himself. It should be borne in mind that the second part of LUCASTA was not even printed during the poet's life. If he had survived to republish the first portion, and to revise the second perhaps we should have had a better text.

ADVICE TO MY BEST BROTHER,  
COLL: FRANCIS LOVELACE. <86.1>

Frank, wil't live unhandsomely? trust not too far  
Thy self to waving seas: for what thy star,  
Calculated by sure event, must be,  
Look in the glassy-epithete, <86.2> and see.

Yet settle here your rest, and take your state,  
And in calm halcyon's nest ev'n build your fate;  
Prethee lye down securely, Frank, and keep  
With as much no noyse the inconstant deep  
As its inhabitants; nay, stedfast stand,  
As if discover'd were a New-found-land,  
Fit for plantation here. Dream, dream still,  
Lull'd in Dione's cradle; dream, untill  
Horror awake your sense, and you now find  
Your self a bubbled pastime for the wind;  
And in loose Thetis blankets torn and tost.  
Frank, to undo thy self why art at cost?

Nor be too confident, fix'd on the shore:  
For even that too borrows from the store  
Of her rich neighbour, since now wisest know  
(And this to Galileo's judgement ow),

The palsie earth it self is every jot  
As frail, inconstant, waveing, as that blot  
We lay upon the deep, that sometimes lies  
Chang'd, you would think, with 's botoms properties;  
But this eternal, strange Ixion's wheel  
Of giddy earth ne'er whirling leaves to reel,  
Till all things are inverted, till they are  
Turn'd to that antick confus'd state they were.

Who loves the golden mean, doth safely want  
A cobwebb'd cot and wrongs entail'd upon't;  
He richly needs a pallace for to breed  
Vipers and moths, that on their feeder feed;  
The toy that we (too true) a mistress call,  
Whose looking-glass and feather weighs up all;  
And cloaths which larks would play with in the sun,  
That mock him in the night, when 's course is run.

To rear an edifice by art so high,  
That envy should not reach it with her eye,  
Nay, with a thought come neer it. Wouldst thou know,  
How such a structure should be raisd, build low.  
The blust'ring winds invisible rough stroak  
More often shakes the stubborn'st, prop'rest oak;  
And in proud turrets we behold withal,  
'Tis the imperial top declines to fall:  
Nor does Heav'n's lightning strike the humble vales,  
But high-aspiring mounts batters and scales.

A breast of proof defies all shocks of Fate,  
Fears in the best, hopes in worsers state;  
Heaven forbid that, as of old, time ever  
Flourish'd in spring so contrary, now never.  
That mighty breath, which blew foul Winter hither,  
Can eas'ly puffe it to a fairer weather.  
Why dost despair then, Frank? Aeolus has  
A Zephyrus as well as Boreas.

'Tis a false sequel, soloecisme 'gainst those  
Precepts by fortune giv'n us, to suppose  
That, 'cause it is now ill, 't will ere be so;  
Apollo doth not always bend his bow;  
But oft, uncrowned of his beams divine,  
With his soft harp awakes the sleeping Nine.

In strictest things magnanimous appear,  
Greater in hope, howere thy fate, then<86.3> fear:  
Draw all your sails in quickly, though no storm  
Threaten your ruine with a sad alarm;  
For tell me how they differ, tell me, pray,  
A cloudy tempest and a too fair day?

<86.1> One of the younger brothers of the poet. In the year of the Restoration he filled the office of Recorder of Canterbury, and in that capacity delivered the address of the city to Charles II. on his passage through the place. This speech was printed in 1660, 4to, three leaves. The following extracts from the CALENDARS OF STATE PAPERS (Domestic Series, 1660-1, page 139), throw a little additional light on the history of this person:—

"1660, July 1.—Petition of Fras. Lovelace, Recorder of Canterbury, to the King, for the stewardship of the liberties of St. Augustine, near Canterbury, for himself and his son Goldwell. Has suffered sequestration, imprisonment, and loss of office, for his loyalty. WITH A NOTE OF THE REQUESTED GRANT FOR FRAS. LOVELACE.

"Grant to Fras. Lovelace, of the office of chief steward of the Liberties of the late monastery of St. Augustine, near Canterbury."

<86.2> Unless the poet is advising his brother, before the latter ventures on a long sea voyage, to

look in the crystal, or beryl, so popular at that time, in order to read his fortune, I must confess my ignorance of the meaning of "glassy-epithete." See, for an account of the beryl, Aubrey's MISCELLANIES, edit. 1857, p. 154.

<86.3> Than.

## PARIS'S SECOND JUDGEMENT,

UPON THE THREE DAUGHTERS OF MY DEAR  
BROTHER MR. R. CAESAR. <87.1>

Behold! three sister-wonders, in whom met,  
Distinct and chaste, the splendrous <87.2> counterfeit <87.3>  
Of Juno, Venus and the warlike Maid,  
Each in their three divinities array'd;  
The majesty and state of Heav'n's great Queen,  
And when she treats the gods, her noble meen;  
The sweet victorious beauties and desires  
O' th' sea-born princess, empress too of fires;  
The sacred arts and glorious lawrels torn  
From the fair brow o' th' goddesses father-born;  
All these were quarter'd in each snowy coat,  
With canton'd <87.4> honours of their own, to boot.  
Paris, by fate new-wak'd from his dead cell,  
Is charg'd to give his doom impossible.  
He views in each the brav'ry <87.5> of all Ide;  
Whilst one, as once three, doth his soul divide.  
Then sighs so equally they're glorious all:  
WHAT PITY THE WHOLE WORLD IS BUT ONE BALL!

<87.1> Second son of Sir John Caesar, Knt., who was the second surviving son of Sir Julius Caesar, Knt., Master of the Rolls. Mr. Robert Caesar married the poet's sister Johanna, by whom he had three daughters, co-heirs—Anne, Juliana, and Johanna. These are the ladies commemorated in the text. See Lodge's LIFE OF SIR JULIUS CAESAR, 1827, p. 54.

<87.2> Original reads SPLENDORS.

<87.3> This word is here used to signify simply RESEMBLANCE or COPY.

<87.4> i.e. quartered. CANTON, in heraldry, is a square space at one of the corners of a shield of arms.

<87.5> Bravery here means, as it often does in writers of and before the time of Lovelace, A BEAUTIFUL OR FINE SPECTACLE, or simply BEAUTY. BRAVE in the sense of FINE (gaudy or gallant) is still in use.

## PEINTURE.

### A PANEGYRICK TO THE BEST PICTURE OF FRIENDSHIP, MR. PET. LILLY.

If Pliny, Lord High Treasurer of all <88.1>  
Natures exchequer shuffled in this our ball, <88.2>  
Peinture her richer rival did admire,  
And cry'd she wrought with more almighty fire,  
That judg'd the unnumber'd issue of her scrawl,  
Infinite and various as her mother soul,  
That contemplation into matter brought,  
Body'd Ideas, and could form a thought.  
Why do I pause to couch the cataract, <88.3>  
And the grosse pearls from our dull eyes abstract,  
That, pow'rful Lilly, now awaken'd we  
This new creation may behold by thee?

To thy victorious pencil all, that eyes



And minds call reach, do bow. The deities  
 Bold Poets first but feign'd, you do and make,  
 And from your awe they our devotion take.  
 Your beauteous pallet first defin'd Love's Queen,  
 And made her in her heav'nly colours seen;  
 You strung the bow of the Bandite her son,<88.4>  
 And tipp'd his arrowes with religion.  
 Neptune as unknown as his fish might dwell,  
 But that you seat him in his throne of shell.  
 The thunderers artillery and brand,  
 You fancied Rome in his fantastick hand;  
 And the pale frights, the pains, and fears of hell  
 First from your sullen melancholy fell.  
 Who cleft th' infernal dog's loath'd head in three,  
 And spun out Hydra's fifty necks? by thee  
 As prepossess'd w' enjoy th' Elizian plain,  
 Which but before was flatter'd<88.5> in our brain.  
 Who ere yet view'd airs child invisible,  
 A hollow voice, but in thy subtile skill?  
 Faint stamm'ring Eccho you so draw, that we  
 The very repercussion do see.  
 Cheat-HOCUS-POCUS-Nature an assay<88.6>  
 O' th' spring affords us: praesto, and away!<88.7>  
 You all the year do chain her and her fruits,  
 Roots to their beds, and flowers to their roots.  
 Have not mine eyes feasted i' th' frozen Zone  
 Upon a fresh new-grown collation  
 Of apples, unknown sweets, that seem'd to me  
 Hanging to tempt as on the fatal tree,  
 So delicately limn'd I vow'd to try  
 My<88.8> appetite impos'd upon my eye?<88.9>  
 You, sir, alone, fame, and all-conqu'ring rime,  
 File<88.10> the set teeth of all-devouring time.  
 When beauty once thy vertuous paint hath on,  
 Age needs not call her to vermilion;  
 Her beams nere shed or change like th' hair of day,<88.11>  
 She scatters fresh her everlasting ray.  
 Nay, from her ashes her fair virgin fire  
 Ascends, that doth new massacres conspire,  
 Whilst we wipe off the num'rous score of years,  
 And do behold our grandsire[s] as our peers;  
 With the first father of our house compare  
 We do the features of our new-born heir:  
 For though each coppied a son, they all  
 Meet in thy first and true original.  
 Sacred! luxurious! what princesse not  
 But comes to you to have her self begot?  
 As, when first man was kneaded, from his side  
 Is born to's hand a ready-made-up bride.  
 He husband to his issue then doth play,  
 And for more wives remove the obstructed way:  
 So by your art you spring up in two noons  
 What could not else be form'd by fifteen suns;  
 Thy skill doth an'mate the prolifick flood,  
 And thy red oyl assimilates to blood.  
 Where then, when all the world pays its respect,  
 Lies our transalpine barbarous neglect?  
 When the chast hands of pow'rful Titian  
 Had drawn the scourges of our God and man,  
 And now the top of th' altar did ascend  
 To crown the heav'nly piece with a bright end;  
 Whilst he, who in<88.12> seven languages gave law,  
 And always, like the Sun, his subjects saw,  
 Did, in his robes imperial and gold,

The basis of the doubtful ladder hold.  
O Charls!<88.13> a nobler monument than that,  
Which thou thine own executor wert at!  
When to our huffling Henry<88.14> there complain'd  
A griev'd earl, that thought his honor stain'd:  
Away (frown'd he), for your own safeties, hast!  
In one cheap hour ten coronets I'l cast;  
But Holbeen's noble and prodigious worth  
Onely the pangs of an whole age brings forth.<88.15>  
Henry! a word so princely saving said,  
It might new raise the ruines thou hast made.

O sacred Peincture! that dost fairly draw,  
What but in mists deep inward Poets saw;  
'Twixt thee and an Intelligence no odds,<88.16>  
That art of privy council to the gods!  
By thee unto our eyes they do prefer  
A stamp of their abstracted character;  
Thou, that in frames eternity dost bind,  
And art a written and a body'd mind;  
To thee is ope the Juncto o' th' abyse,  
And its conspiracy detected is;  
Whilest their cabal thou to our sense dost show,  
And in thy square paint'st what they threat below.

Now, my best Lilly, let's walk hand in hand,  
And smile at this un-understanding land;  
Let them their own dull counterfeits adore,  
Their rainbow-cloaths admire, and no more.  
Within one shade of thine more substance is,  
Than all their varnish'd idol-mistresses:  
Whilst great Vasari and Vermander shall  
Interpret the deep mystery of all,  
And I unto our modern Picts shall show,  
What due renown to thy fair art they owe  
In the delineated lives of those,  
By whom this everlasting lawrel grows.  
Then, if they will not gently apprehend,  
Let one great blot give to their fame an end;  
Whilst no poetick flower their herse doth dresse,  
But perish they and their effigies.

<88.1> An allusion is, of course, intended to Pliny's NATURAL HISTORY which, through Holland's translation, became popular in England after 1601.

<88.2> i.e. in our globe.

<88.3> A term borrowed from the medical, or rather surgical, vocabulary. "To couch a cataract" (i.e. in the eye) is to remove it by surgical process.

<88.4> An allusion to Lely's pictures of Venus and Cupid.

<88.5> Falsely portrayed.

<88.6> A glimpse.

<88.7> Some picture by Lely, in which the painter introduced a spring landscape, is meant. The poet feigns the copy of Nature to be so close that one might suppose the Spring had set in before the usual time. The canvass is removed, and the illusion is dispelled. "Praesto, 'tis away," would be a preferable reading.

<88.8> i.e. if my appetite, &c. Lovelace's style is elliptical to an almost unexampled degree.

<88.9> The same story, with variations, has been told over and over again since the time of Zeuxis.

<88.10> Original edition has FILES.

<88.11> HAIR is here used in what has become quite an obsolete sense. The meaning is outward form, nature, or character. The word used to be by no means uncommon; but it is now, as was before

remarked, out of fashion; and, indeed, I do not think that it is found even in any old writer used exactly in the way in which Lovelace has employed it.

<88.12> Original reads TO.

<88.13> Charles V.

<88.14> Henry VIII.

<88.15> A story too well known to require repetition. The Earl is not mentioned.—See Walpole's ANECDOTES OF PAINTING, ed. 1862, p.71.

<88.16> i.e. no difference. A compliment to Lely's spirituality.

AN ANNIVERSARY ON THE HYMENEALS OF MY NOBLE KINSMAN, <89.1>  
THO. STANLEY, ESQUIRE. <89.2>

I.

The day is curl'd about agen  
To view the splendor she was in;  
When first with hallow'd hands  
The holy man knit the mysterious bands  
When you two your contracted souls did move  
Like cherubims above,  
And did make love,  
As your un-understanding issue now,  
In a glad sigh, a smile, a tear, a vow.

II.

Tell me, O self-reviving Sun,  
In thy perigrination  
Hast thou beheld a pair  
Twist their soft beams like these in their chaste air?  
As from bright numberlesse imbracing rayes  
Are sprung th' industrious dayes,  
So when they gaze,  
And change their fertile eyes with the new morn,  
A beauteous offspring is shot forth, not born.

III.

Be witness then, all-seeing Sun,  
Old spy, thou that thy race hast run  
In full five thousand rings; <89.3>  
To thee were ever purer offerings  
Sent on the wings of Faith? and thou, O Night, <89.4>  
Curtain of their delight,  
By these made bright,  
Have you not mark'd their coelestial play,  
And no more peek'd the gayeties of day?

IV.

Come then, pale virgins, roses strow,  
Mingled with Ios as you go.  
The snowy ox is kill'd,  
The fane with pros'lyte lads and lasses fill'd,  
You too may hope the same seraphic joy,  
Old time cannot destroy,  
Nor fulnesse cloy;  
When, like these, you shall stamp by sympathies  
Thousands of new-born-loves with your chaste eyes.

<89.1> Lovelace was connected with the Stanleys through the Auchers. The Kentish families, about this time, intermarried with each other to a very large extent, partly to indemnify themselves from the consequences of gravelkind tenure (though many had procured parliamentary relief); and the Lovelaces, the Stanleys, the Hammonds, the Sandyses, were all more or less bound together by the ties of kindred. See the tree prefixed by Sir Egerton Brydges to his edition of HAMMOND'S POEMS, 1816,

and the Introduction to STANLEY'S POEMS, 1814. Sir William Lovelace, the poet's grandfather, married Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Aucher, Esq., of Bishopsbourne, near Canterbury, while Sir William Hammond, of St. Alban's Court, married, as his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Anthony Aucher, Esq., of Bishopsbourne, by whom he had, among other children, Mary, who became the wife of Sir Thomas Stanley, of Cumberlow, father of Thomas Stanley, the poet, historian, and translator of Bion, &c.

<89.2> See THE POEMS OF WILLIAM HAMMOND, 1655, edited by Sir E. Brydges, 1816, p. 54, where there is a similar poem on Stanley and his bride from the pen of Hammond, who also claimed relationship with the then newly-married poet. The best account of Stanley is in the reprint of his Poems and Translations, 1814, 8vo.

<89.3> Meaning that the earth had made 5000 revolutions round the sun; or, in other words, that the sun was 5000 years old.

<89.4> Original reads AND THOU OF NIGHT.

## ON SANAZAR'S BEING HONOURED WITH SIX HUNDRED DUCKETS BY THE CLARISSIMI OF VENICE, FOR COMPOSING AN ELIGIACK HEXASTICK OF THE CITY.

### A SATYRE.

Twas a blith prince<90.1> exchang'd five hundred crowns  
For a fair turnip. Dig, dig on, O clowns  
But how this comes about, Fates, can you tell,  
This more then Maid of Meurs, this miracle?  
Let me not live, if I think not St. Mark  
Has all the oar, as well as beasts, in's ark!  
No wonder 'tis he marries the rich sea,  
But to betroth him to nak'd Poesie,  
And with a bankrupt muse to merchandise;  
His treasures beams, sure, have put out his eyes.<90.2>  
His conquest at Lepanto<90.3> I'll let pass,  
When the sick sea with turbants night-cap'd was;  
And now at Candie his full courage shown,  
That wan'd to a wan line the half-half moon.<90.4>  
This is a wreath, this is a victorie,  
Caesar himself would have look'd pale to see,  
And in the height of all his triumphs feel  
Himself but chain'd to such a mighty wheel.  
And now me thinks we ape Augustus state,  
So ugly we his high worth imitate,  
Monkey his godlike glories; so that we  
Keep light and form with such deformitie,  
As I have seen an arrogant baboon  
With a small piece of glasse zany the sun.  
Rome to her bard, who did her battails sing,  
Indifferent gave to poet and to king;  
With the same lawrells were his temples fraught,  
Who best had written, and who best had fought;  
The self same fame they equally did feel,  
One's style ador'd as much as t' other's steel.  
A chain or fasces she could then afford  
The sons of Phoebus, we, an axe or cord;  
Sometimes a coronet was her renown,  
And ours, the dear prerogative of a crown.  
In marble statu'd walks great Lucan lay,  
And now we walk, our own pale statua.  
They the whole year with roses crownd would dine,  
And we in all December know no wine;  
Disciplin'd, dieted, sure there hath bin  
Ods 'twixt a poet and a Capuchin.  
Of princes, women, wine, to sing I see  
Is no apocrypha: for to rise high

Commend this olio of this lord 'tis fit:  
 Nay, ten to one, but you have part of it;  
 There is that justice left, since you maintain  
 His table, he should counter-feed your brain.  
 Then write how well he in his sack hath droll'd,  
 Straight there's a bottle to your chamber roll'd,  
 Or with embroider'd words praise his French suit,  
 Month hence 'tis yours with his mans, to boot;  
 Or but applaud his boss'd legs: two to none,  
 But he most nobly doth give you one.  
 Or spin an elegie on his false hair:  
 'Tis well, he cries, but living hair is dear.  
 Yet say that out of order ther's one curl,  
 And all the hopes of your reward you furl.<90.5>  
 Write a deep epick poem, and you may  
 As soon delight them as the opera,  
 Where they Diogenes thought in his tub,  
 Never so sowre did look so sweet a club.  
 You that do suck for thirst your black quill's blood,<90.6>  
 And chaw your labour'd papers for your food,  
 I will inform you how and what to praise,  
 Then skin y' in satin as young Lovelace plaies.  
 Beware, as you would your fierce guests, your lice,  
 To strip the cloath of gold from cherish'd vice;  
 Rather stand off with awe and reverend fear,  
 Hang a poetick pendant in her ear,  
 Court her as her adorers do their glasse,  
 Though that as much of a true substance has,  
 Whilst all the gall from your wild<90.7> ink you drain,  
 The beauteous sweets of vertues cheeks to stain;  
 And in your livery let her be known,  
 As poor and tatter'd as in her own.  
 Nor write, nor speak you more of sacred writ,  
 But what shall force up your arrested wit.  
 Be chaste; religion and her priests your scorn,  
 Whilst the vain fanes of idiots you adorn.  
 It is a mortal errour, you must know,  
 Of any to speak good, if he be so.  
 Rayl, till your edged breath flea<90.8> your raw throat,  
 And burn remarks<90.9> on all of gen'rous note;  
 Each verse be an indictment, be not free  
 Sanctity 't self from thy scurrility.  
 Libel your father, and your dam buffoon,  
 The noblest matrons of the isle lampoon,  
 Whilst Aretine and 's bodies you dispute,  
 And in your sheets your sister prostitute.  
 Yet there belongs a sweetness, softnesse too,  
 Which you must pay, but first, pray, know to who.  
 There is a creature, (if I may so call  
 That unto which they do all prostrate fall)  
 Term'd mistress, when they'r angry; but, pleas'd high,  
 It is a princesse, saint, divinity.  
 To this they sacrifice the whole days light,  
 Then lye with their devotion all night;  
 For this you are to dive to the abysse,  
 And rob for pearl the closet of some fish.  
 Arabia and Sabaea you must strip  
 Of all their sweets, for to supply her lip;  
 And steal new fire from heav'n, for to repair  
 Her unfledg'd scalp with Berenice's hair;  
 Then seat her in Cassiopeia's chair.  
 As now you're in your coach: save you, bright sir,  
 (O, spare your thanks) is not this finer far  
 Then walk un-hided, when that every stone

Has knock'd acquaintance with your ankle-bone?  
When your wing'd papers, like the last dove, nere  
Return'd to quit you of your hope or fear,  
But left you to the mercy of your host  
And your days fare, a fortified toast.<90.10>

How many battels, sung in epick strain,  
Would have procur'd your head thatch from the rain  
Not all the arms of Thebes and Troy would get  
One knife but to anatomize your meat,  
A funeral elegie, with a sad boon,<90.11>  
Might make you (hei!) sip wine like maccaroon;<90.12>  
But if perchance there did a riband<90.13> come,  
Not the train-band so fierce with all its drum:  
Yet with your torch you homeward would retire,  
And heart'ly wish your bed your fun'ral pyre.

With what a fury have I known you feed  
Upon a contract and the hopes 't might speed!  
Not the fair bride, impatient of delay,  
Doth wish like you the beauties of that day;  
Hotter than all the roasted cooks you sat  
To dresse the fricace of your alphabet,  
Which sometimes would be drawn dough anagramme,<90.14>  
Sometimes acrostick parched in the flame;<90.15>  
Then posies stew'd with sippets, mottos by:  
Of minced verse a miserable pye.  
How many knots slip'd, ere you twist their name  
With th' old device, as both their heart's the same!  
Whilst like to drills the feast in your false jaw  
You would transmit at leisure to your maw;  
Then after all your fooling, fat, and wine,  
Glutton'd at last, return at home to pine.

Tell me, O Sun, since first your beams did play  
To night, and did awake the sleeping day;  
Since first your steeds of light their race did start,  
Did you ere blush as now? Oh thou, that art  
The common father to the base pissmire,  
As well as great Alcides, did the fire  
From thine owne altar which the gods adore,  
Kindle the souls of gnats and wasps before?

Who would delight in his chaste eyes to see  
Dormise to strike at lights of poesie?  
Faction and envy now are<90.16> downright rage.  
Once a five-knotted whip there was, the stage:  
The beadle and the executioner,  
To whip small errors, and the great ones tear;  
Now, as er'e Nimrod the first king, he writes:  
That's strongest, th' ablest deepest bites.  
The muses weeping fly their hill, to see  
Their noblest sons of peace in mutinie.  
Could there nought else this civil war compleat,  
But poets raging with poetic heat,  
Tearing themselves and th' endlesse wreath, as though  
Immortal they, their wrath should be so, too?  
And doubly fir'd Apollo burns to see  
In silent Helicon a naumachie.  
Parnassus hears these at his first alarms;  
Never till now Minerva was in arms.

O more then conqu'ror of the world, great Rome!  
Thy heros did with gentleness or'e come  
Thy foes themselves, but one another first,  
Whilst envy stript alone was left, and burst.  
The learn'd Decemviri, 'tis true, did strive,  
But to add flames to keep their fame alive;  
Whilst the eternal lawrel hung ith' air:

Nor of these ten sons was there found one heir.  
Like to the golden tripod, it did pass  
From this to this, till 't came to him, whose 'twas.  
Caesar to Gallus trundled it, and he  
To Maro: Maro, Naso, unto thee?  
Naso to his Tibullus flung the wreath,  
He to Catullus thus did bequeath.  
This glorious circle, to another round,  
At last the temples of their god it bound.

I might believe at least, that each might have  
A quiet fame contented in his grave,  
Envy the living, not the dead, doth bite:  
For after death all men receive their right.<90.17>  
If it be sacrilege for to profane  
Their holy ashes, what is't then their flame?  
He does that wrong unweeting<90.18> or in ire,  
As if one should put out the vestal fire.

Let earths four quarters speak, and thou, Sun, bear  
Now witness for thy fellow-traveller.  
I was ally'd, dear Uncle,<90.19> unto thee  
In blood, but thou, alas, not unto me;  
Your vertues, pow'rs, and mine differ'd at best,  
As they whose springs you saw, the east and west.<90.20>  
Let me awhile be twisted in thy shine,  
And pay my due devotions at thy shrine.

Might learned Waynman<90.21> rise, who went with thee  
In thy heav'ns work beside divinity,  
I should sit still; or mighty Falkland<90.22> stand  
To justifie with breath his pow'rful hand;  
The glory, that doth circle your pale urn,  
Might hallow'd still and undefiled burn:  
But I forbear. Flames, that are wildly thrown  
At sacred heads, curle back upon their own;  
Sleep, heavenly Sands, whilst what they do or write,  
Is to give God himself and you your right.

There is not in my mind one sullen<90.23> fate  
Of old, but is concentred in our state:  
Vandall ore-runners, Goths in literature:  
Ploughmen that would Parnassus new-manure;  
Ringers of verse that all-in-chime,  
And toll the changes upon every rime.  
A mercer now by th' yard does measure ore  
An ode, which was but by the foot before;  
Deals you an ell of epigram, and swears  
It is the strongest and the finest wears.  
No wonder, if a drawer verses rack,  
If 'tis not his, 't may be the spir't of sack;  
Whilst the fair bar-maid stroaks the muses teat,  
For milk to make the posset up compleat.

Arise, thou rev'rend shade, great Johnson, rise!  
Break through thy marble natural disguise!  
Behold a mist of insects, whose meer breath  
Will melt thy hallow'd leaden house of death.  
What was Crispinus,<90.24> that you should defie  
The age for him?<90.25> He durst not look so high  
As your immortal rod, he still did stand  
Honour'd, and held his forehead to thy brand.  
These scorpions, with which we have to do,  
Are fiends, not only small but deadly too.  
Well mightst thou rive thy quill up to the back,  
And scruce thy lyre's grave chords, untill they crack.  
For though once hell resented musick, these  
Divels will not, but are in worse disease.  
How would thy masc'line spirit, father Ben,

Sweat to behold basely deposed men,  
 Justled from the prerog'tive of their bed,  
 Whilst wives are per'wig'd with their husbands head?  
 Each snatches the male quill from his faint hand,  
 And must both nobler write and understand,  
 He to her fury the soft plume doth bow:  
 O pen, nere truely justly slit till now!  
 Now as her self a poem she doth dresse.  
 And curls a line, as she would do a tresse;  
 Powders a sonnet as she does her hair,  
 Then prostitutes them both to publick aire.  
 Nor is 't enough, that they their faces blind  
 With a false dye; but they must paint their mind,  
 In meeter scold, and in scann'd order brawl,  
 Yet there's one Sapho<90.26> left may save them all.

But now let me recal my passion.  
 Oh! (from a noble father, nobler son)  
 You, that alone are the Clarissimi,  
 And the whole gen'rous state of Venice be,  
 It shall not be recorded Sanazar  
 Shall boast inthron'd alone this new made star;  
 You, whose correcting sweetnesse hath forbad  
 Shame to the good, and glory to the bad;  
 Whose honour hath ev'n into vertue tam'd  
 These swarms, that now so angerly I nam'd.  
 Forgive what thus distemper'd I indite:  
 For it is hard a SATYRE not to write.  
 Yet, as a virgin that heats all her blood  
 At the first motion of bad<90.27> understood,  
 Then, at meer thought of fair chastity,  
 Straight cools again the tempests of her sea:  
 So when to you I my devotions raise,  
 All wrath and storms do end in calm and praise.

<90.1> Louis XI. of France was the prince here intended. See MERY TALES AND QUICKE ANSWERS, No. 23 (ed. Hazlitt). I fear that if Lovelace had derived his knowledge of this incident <f>rom the little work mentioned, he would have been still more sarcastic; for Louis, in the TALES AND QUICKE ANSWERS, is made to give, not 500 crowns for a turnip, but 1000 crowns for a radish.

<90.2> Perhaps Lovelace is rather too severe on Sannazaro. That writer is said to have occupied twenty years in the composition of his poem on the Birth of the Saviour, for which he probably did not receive a sixth part of the sum paid to him for his hexastic on Venice; and so he deserved this little windfal, which came out of the pocket of a Government rich enough to pay it ten times over. See Corniano's VITA DI JACOPO SANNAZARO, prefixed to the edition of his ARCADIA, published at Milan in 1806. Amongst the translations printed at the end of LUCASTA, and which it seems very likely were among the earliest poetical essays of Lovelace, is this very epigram of Sannazaro. As in the case of THE ANT, I have little doubt that the satire was suggested by the translation.

<90.3> The battle of Lepanto, in which Don John of Austria and the Venetians defeated the Turks, 1571.

<90.4> The Turkish crescent.

<90.5> Close, or shut up.

<90.6> i.e. write as a means of subsistence.

<90.7> Unrefined.

<90.8> Flay, excoriate.

<90.9> Original reads ALL MARKS.

<90.10> A hard toasted crust.

<90.11> A fee or gratuity given to a poet on a mournful occasion, and made more liberal by the circumstances of affliction in which the donors are placed.



<90.12> Generally, a mere coxcomb or dandy; but here the poet implies a man about town who is rich enough to indulge in fashionable luxuries.

<90.13> The ribbon by which the star of an order of knighthood was attached to the breast of the fortunate recipient. It sometimes also stood for the armband worn by gentlemen in our poet's day, as a mark of some lady's esteem. See Shirley's POEMS (Works, vi. 440).

<90.14> A crude anagram.

<90.15> An imperfect acrostic. Few readers require to be told that anagrams and acrostics were formerly one of the most fashionable species of composition. Lovelace here pictures a poetaster "stewing" his brains with a poem of this description, which of course demanded a certain amount of tedious and minute attention to the arrangement of the name of the individual to whom the anagram or acrostic was to be addressed, and this was especially the case, where the writer contemplated a DOUBLE acrostic.

<90.16> Original reads IS.

<90.17> Ovid. EL. 15.

<90.18> Unwitting.

<90.19> The Lovelaces were connected, not only with the Hammonds Auchers, &c., but on the mother's side with the family of Sandys. See Berry's KENT GENEALOGIES, which, however, are not by any means invariably reliable. The subjoined is partly from Berry:—

Edwin Sandys, === Cecilia, da. of Thomas  
Archbishop of ! Wilford, of Cranbrook,  
York, ob. 1588. ! Co. Kent, Esq. ob. 1610.

!

!!!

[Sir]===(4thly)Catherine, George, trans- Anne===Sir William  
Edwin ! da. of Sir R. lator of the Barnes, of  
Sandys ! Bulkeley, of Psalms, &c., Woolwich,  
! Anglesey. ob. 1643-4, the poet's  
! Lovelace's maternal  
! GREAT-uncle. grandfather.

!

Richard Sandys Esq.===Hester, da. of Edwin Aucher, second  
son of Anthony Aucher, Esq., of  
Bishopsbourne.

<90.20> [George] Sandys published, in 1615, his "Relation of a Journey Begun A.D. 1610," &c., which became very popular, and was frequently reprinted.

<90.21> "There was Selden, and he sat close by the chair;

Wainman not far off, which was very fair."

Suckling's SESSION OF THE POETS.

<90.22> "Hales set by himself, most gravely did smile  
To see them about nothing keep such a wil;  
APOLLO had spied him, but knowing his mind  
Past by, and call'd FALKLAND, that sat just behind.  
He was of late so gone with divinity,  
That he had almost forgot his poetry,  
Though to say the truth (and APOLLO did know it)  
He might have been both his priest and poet."  
Suckling's SESSION OF THE POETS.

Lord Falkland was a contributor to JONSONUS VIRBIUS, 1638, and was well known in his day as an occasional writer.

<90.23> SULLEN is here used in the sense of MISCHIEVOUS. In Worcester's Dictionary an example is given of its employment by Dryden in a similar signification.

<90.24> Thomas Decker, the dramatist and poet, whom Jonson attacked in his POETASTER, 1602, under the name of CRISPINUS. Decker retorted in SATIROMASTIX, printed in the same year, in which

Jonson appears as YOUNG HORACE.

<90.25> An allusion to the lines:

"Come, leave the loathed stage,  
And the more loathsome age,"

prefixed to the NEW INNE, 1631, 8vo. Jonson's adopted son Randolph expostulated with him on this occasion in the ode beginning:—

"Ben, doe not leave the stage,  
'Cause 'tis a loathsome age."  
Randolph's POEMS, 1640, p. 64.

Carew and others did the same.

<90.26> Katherine Philips, the MATCHLESS ORINDA, b. 1631, d. 1664. Jeremy Taylor addressed to her his "Measures and Offices of Friendship," 1657, and Cowley wrote an ode upon her death.

<90.27> By MOTION OF BAD I presume the poet means WICKED IMPULSE.

## COMMENDATORY VERSES, PREFIXED TO VARIOUS PUBLICATIONS BETWEEN 1652 AND 1657.

TO MY DEAR FRIEND MR. E[LDRED] R[EVETT].<91.1>  
ON HIS POEMS MORAL AND DIVINE.

Cleft as the top of the inspired hill,  
Struggles the soul of my divided quill,  
Whilst this foot doth the watry mount aspire,  
That Sinai's living and enlivening fire,  
Behold my powers storm'd by a twisted light  
O' th' Sun and his, first kindled his sight,  
And my lost thoughts invoke the prince of day,  
My right to th' spring of it and him do pray.

Say, happy youth, crown'd with a heav'nly ray  
Of the first flame, and interwreathed bay,  
Inform my soul in labour to begin,  
Ios or Anthems, Poeans or a Hymne.  
Shall I a hecatombe on thy tripod slay,  
Or my devotions at thy altar pay?  
While which t' adore th' amaz'd world cannot tell,  
The sublime Urim or deep oracle.

Heark! how the moving chords temper our brain,  
As when Apollo serenades the main,  
Old Ocean smooths his sullen furrow'd front,  
And Nereids do glide soft measures on't;  
Whilst th' air puts on its sleekest, smoothest face,  
And each doth turn the others looking-glasse;  
So by the sinewy lyre now strook we see  
Into soft calms all storm of poesie,  
And former thundering and lightning lines,  
And verse now in its native lustre shines.

How wert thou hid within thyself! how shut!  
Thy pretious Iliads lock'd up in a nut!  
Not hearing of thee thou dost break out strong,  
Invading forty thousand men in song;  
And we, secure in our thin empty heat,  
Now find ourselves at once surprised and beat,  
Whilst the most valiant of our wits now sue,  
Fling down their arms, ask quarter too of you.

So cabin'd up in its disguis'd coarse<91.2> rust,  
 And scurf'd all ore with its unseemly crust,  
 The diamond, from 'midst the humbler stones,  
 Sparkling shoots forth the price of nations.  
 Ye safe unriddlers of the stars, pray tell,  
 By what name shall I stamp my miracle?  
 Thou strange inverted Aeson, that leap'st ore  
 From thy first infancy into fourscore,  
 That to thine own self hast the midwife play'd,  
 And from thy brain spring'st forth<91.3> the heav'nly maid!  
 Thou staffe of him bore<91.4> him, that bore our sins,  
 Which, but set down, to bloom and bear begins!  
 Thou rod of Aaron, with one motion hurl'd,  
 Bud'st<91.5> a perfume of flowers through the world!  
 You<91.6> strange calcined<91.7> seeds within a glass,  
 Each species Idaea spring'st as 'twas!  
 Bright vestal flame that, kindled but ev'n now,  
 For ever dost thy sacred fires throw!

Thus the repeated acts of Nestor's age,  
 That now had three times ore out-liv'd the stage,  
 And all those beams contracted into one,  
 Alcides in his cradle hath outdone.

But all these flour'shing hiews, with which I die  
 Thy virgin paper, now are vain as I:  
 For 'bove the poets Heav'n th' art taught to shine  
 And move, as in thy proper crystalline;  
 Whence that mole-hill Parnassus thou dost view,  
 And us small ants there dabbling in its dew;  
 Whence thy seraphic soul such hymns doth play,  
 As those to which first danced the first day,  
 Where with a thorn from the world-ransoming wreath  
 Thou stung, dost antiphons and anthems breathe;  
 Where with an Angels quill dip'd i' th' Lambs blood,  
 Thou sing'st our Pelicans all-saving flood,  
 And bath'st thy thoughts in ever-living streams,  
 Rench'd<91.8> from earth's tainted, fat and heavy steams.  
 There move translated youth inroll'd i' th' quire,  
 That only doth with holy lays inspire;  
 To whom his burning coach Eliah sent,  
 And th' royal prophet-priest his harp hath lent;  
 Which thou dost tune in consort unto those  
 Clap wings for ever at each hallow'd close:  
 Whilst we, now weak and fainting in our praise,  
 Sick echo ore thy Halleluiahs.

<91.1> Revett has some verses to the memory of Lovelace, which will be found among the Elegies at the end of the volume. The present lines were apparently written for a projected edition of Revett's poems, which, for some unknown reason, was never published. Revett has also verses prefixed to THE ROYAL GAME OF CHESSE PLAY, 1656; to AYRES AND DIALOGUES, by John Gamble, 1656; and to Hall's translation of the COMMENT OF HIEROCLES UPON THE GOLDEN VERSES OF PYTHAGORAS, 1657.

<91.2> Original has COURSE.

<91.3> This is only one instance among many which might be cited from LUCASTA of the employment of an intransitive verb in a transitive signification.

<91.4> i.e. THAT BORE HIM.

<91.5> i.e. THAT BUD'ST.

<91.6> Orig. has THOU.

<91.7> This word, now employed only in a special sense, was formerly a very common and favourite metaphor. Thus Lord Westmoreland, in his OTIA SACRA, 1648, p. 19, says:—

"When all the vertue we can here put on  
Is but refined imperfection,  
Corruption calcined—"

See also p. 137 of the same volume.

<91.8> Rinsed.

## ON THE BEST, LAST, AND ONLY REMAINING COMEDY OF MR. FLETCHER.

### THE WILD GOOSE CHASE.<92.1>

I'm un-ore-clowded, too! free from the mist!  
The blind and late Heaven's-eyes great Occulist,  
Obscured with the false fires of his sceme,  
Not half those souls are lightned by this theme.

Unhappy murmurers, that still repine  
(After th' Eclipse our Sun doth brighter shine),  
Recant your false grief, and your true joys know;  
Your blisse is endlesse, as you fear'd your woe!  
What fort'nate flood is this! what storm of wit!  
Oh, who would live, and not ore-whelm'd in it?  
No more a fatal Deluge shall be hurl'd:  
This inundation hath sav'd the world.  
Once more the mighty Fletcher doth arise,  
Roab'd in a vest studded with stars and eyes  
Of all his former glories; his last worth  
Imbroiderd with what yet light ere brought forth.  
See! in this glad farewell he doth appear  
Stuck with the Constellations of his Sphere,  
Fearing we numb'd fear'd no flagration,  
Hath curl'd all his fires in this one ONE:  
Which (as they guard his hallowed chast urn)  
The dull aproaching hereticks do burn.

Fletcher at his adieu carouses thus  
To the luxurious ingenious,  
As Cleopatra did of old out-vie,  
Th' un-numb'red dishes of her Anthony,  
When (he at th' empty board a wonderer)  
Smiling she<92.2> calls for pearl and vinegar,  
First pledges him in's BREATH, then at one draught  
Swallows THREE KINGDOMS of To HIS BEST THOUGHT.

Hear, oh ye valiant writers, and subscribe;  
(His force set by) y'are conquer'd by this bribe.  
Though you hold out your selves, he doth commit  
In this a sacred treason in your wit;  
Although in poems desperately stout,  
Give up: this overture must buy you out.

Thus with some prodigal us'rer 't doth fare,  
That keeps his gold still vayl'd, his steel-breast bare;  
That doth exceed his coffers all but's eye,  
And his eyes' idol the wing'd Deity:  
That cannot lock his mines with half the art  
As some rich beauty doth his wretched heart;  
Wild at his real poverty, and so wise  
To win her, turns himself into a prise.  
First startles her with th' emerald Mad-Lover<92.3>  
The ruby Arcas,<92.4> least she should recover  
Her dazled thought, a Diamond he throws,  
Splendid in all the bright Aspatia's woes;<92.5>  
Then to sum up the abstract of his store,

He flings a rope of Pearl of forty<92.6> more.  
Ah, see! the stagg'ring virtue faints! which he  
Beholding, darts his Wealths Epitome;<92.7>  
And now, to consummate her wished fall,  
Shows this one Carbuncle, that darkens all.

<92.1> "THE WILD-GOOSE CHASE. A Comedie: As it hath been acted with singular applause at the BLACKFRIERS. Being the Noble, Last, and Onely REMAINES of those Incomparable DRAMATISTS, Francis Beaumont and John Fletcher, Gent. London: Printed for Humphrey Moseley, 1652," folio.

<92.2> Singer reads HE, but original SHE, as above. Of course Cleopatra is meant.

<92.3> Fletcher's MAD LOVER.

<92.4> Fletcher's FAITHFUL SHEPHERDESS.

<92.5> THE MAID'S TRAGEDY, by Beaumont and Fletcher, 1619.

<92.6> Should we not read FIFTY, and understand the collected edition of Beaumont and Fletcher's Works in 1647?

<92.7> The WILD-GOOSE CHASE, which is also apparently the CARBUNCLE mentioned two lines lower down.

TO  
MY NOBLE KINSMAN THOMAS STANLEY,<93.1> ESQ.  
ON HIS LYRICK POEMS COMPOSED  
BY MR. JOHN GAMBLE.<93.2>

I.

What means this stately tabature,  
The ballance of thy streins,  
Which seems, in stead of sifting pure,  
T' extend and rack thy veins?  
Thy Odes first their own harmony did break:  
For singing, troth, is but in tune to speak.

II.

Nor trus<93.3> thy golden feet and wings.  
It may<93.4> be thought false melody<93.5>  
T' ascend to heav'n by silver strings;  
This is Urania's heraldry.  
Thy royal poem now we may extol,  
As<93.6> truly Luna blazon'd upon Sol.

III.

As when Amphion first did call  
Each listning stone from's den;  
And with his<93.7> lute did form the<93.8> wall,  
But with his words the men;  
So in your twisted numbers now you thus  
Not only stocks perswade, but ravish us.

IV.

Thus do your ayrs eccho ore  
The notes and anthems of the sphaeres,  
And their whole consort back restore,  
As if earth too would blesse Heav'ns ears;  
But yet the spoaks, by which they scal'd so high,  
Gamble hath wisely laid of UT RE MI.<<AN.5>>

<93.1> Thomas Stanley, Esq., author of the HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY, and an elegant poet and translator, v. SUPRA.

Lovelace wrote these lines for AYRES AND DIALOGUES. TO BE SUNG  
TO THE THEORBO, LUTE, OR BASE-VIOLL: By John Gamble, London,  
Printed by William Godbid for the Author, 1656. folio. [The words

are by Stanley.]

<93.2> "Wood, in his account of this person, vol. i. col. 285, conjectures that many of the songs in the above collection (Gamble's AYRES, &c. 1659), were written by the learned Thomas Stanley, Esq., author of the HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY, and seemingly with good reason, for they resemble, in the conciseness and elegant turn of them, those poems of his printed in 1651, containing translations from Anacreon, Bion, Moschus and others."—Hawkins.

<93.3> LUCASTA and AYRES AND DIALOGUES read THUS, which leaves no meaning in this passage.

<93.4> Old editions have MAY IT.

<93.5> Harmonie—AYRES AND DIALOGUES, &c.

<93.6> Original reads AND, and so also the AYRES AND DIALOGUES.

<93.7> Old editions have THE.

<93.8> So the AYRES AND DIALOGUES. LUCASTA has HIS.

<<AN.5>> P. 249. UT RE MI.

See LOVE'S LABOUR'S LOST, 1598, iv. 3:—

"Hol. Old Mantuan! Old Mantuan! who understandeth thee not,  
loves thee not—UT, RE, SOL, la, mi, FA"—

And Singer's SHAKESPEARE, ed. 1856, ii. 257, NOTE 15.

TO DR. F. B[EALE]; ON HIS BOOK OF CHESSE.<94.1>

Sir, how unravell'd is the golden fleece:  
Men, that could only fool at FOX AND GEESE,  
Are new-made polititians<94.2> by thy book,  
And both can judge and conquer with a look.  
The hidden fate<94.3> of princes you unfold;  
Court, clergy, commons, by your law control'd.  
Strange, serious wantoning all that they  
Bluster'd and clutter'd for, you PLAY.

<94.1> These lines, among the last which Lovelace ever wrote, were originally prefixed to "The Royal Game of Chesse-Play. Sometimes the Recreation of the late King, with many of the Nobility. Illustrated with almost an hundred gambetts. Being the Study of Biochino, the famous Italian [Published by Francis Beale.]" Lond. 1656, 12mo.

<94.2> The text of 1656 has, erroneously no doubt, POLITIANS.

<94.3> Text of 1656 has FATES.

TO THE GENIUS OF MR. JOHN HALL.  
ON HIS EXACT TRANSLATION OF HIEROCLES  
HIS COMMENT UPON THE GOLDEN VERSES OF PYTHAGORAS.<95.1>

Tis not from cheap thanks thinly to repay  
Th' immortal grove of thy fair-order'd bay  
Thou planted'st round my humble fane,<95.2> that I  
Stick on thy hearse this sprig of Elegie:  
Nor that your soul so fast was link'd in me,  
That now I've both, since't has forsaken thee:  
That thus I stand a Swisse before thy gate,  
And dare, for such another, time and fate.  
Alas! our faiths made different essays,  
Our Minds and Merits brake two several ways;  
Justice commands I wake thy learned dust,  
And truth, in whom all causes center must.

Behold! when but a youth, thou fierce didst whip  
Upright the crooked age, and gilt vice strip;  
A senator praetext, <95.3> that knew'st to sway<95.4>  
The fasces, yet under the ferula;  
Rank'd with the sage, ere blossome did thy chin,  
Sleeked without, and hair all ore within,  
Who in the school could'st argue as in schools:  
Thy lessons were ev'n academie rules.  
So that fair Cam saw thee matriculate,  
At once a tyro and a graduate.

At nineteen, what ESSAYES<95.5> have we beheld!  
That well might have the book of Dogmas swell'd;  
Tough Paradoxes, such as Tully's, thou  
Didst heat thee with, when snowy was thy brow,  
When thy undown'd face mov'd the Nine to shake,  
And of the Muses did a decad make.  
What shall I say? by what allusion bold?  
NONE BUT THE SUN WAS ERE SO YOUNG AND OLD.

Young reverend shade, ascend awhile! whilst we  
Now celebrate this posthume victorie,  
This victory, that doth contract in death  
Ev'n all the pow'rs and labours of thy breath.  
Like the Judean Hero, <95.6> in thy fall  
Thou pull'st the house of learning on us all.  
And as that soldier conquest doubted not,  
Who but one splinter had of Castriot, <95.7>  
But would assault ev'n death so strongly charmd,  
And naked oppose rocks, with his<95.8> bone<95.9> arm'd;  
So we, secure in this fair relique, stand<95.10>  
The slings and darts shot by each profane hand.  
These sovereign leaves thou left'st us are become  
Sear clothes against all Times infection.

Sacred Hierocles, whose heav'nly thought  
First acted ore this comment, ere it wrote, <95.11>  
Thou hast so spirited, elixir'd, we  
Conceive there is a noble alchymie,  
That's turning of this gold to something more  
Pretious than gold, we never knew before.  
Who now shall doubt the metempsychosis  
Of the great Author, that shall peruse this?  
Let others dream thy shadow wandering strays  
In th' Elizian mazes hid with bays;  
Or that, snatcht up in th' upper region,  
'Tis kindled there a constellation;  
I have inform'd me, and declare with ease  
THY SOUL IS FLED INTO HIEROCLES.

<95.1> These lines were originally prefixed to "Hierocles upon the Golden Verses of Pythagoras. Teaching a Virtuous and Worthy Life. Translated by John Hall, of Durham, Esquire. OPUS POSTHUMUM." Lond. 1657, 12mo. (The copy among the King's pamphlets in the British Museum appears to have been purchased on the 8th Sept. 1656.) The variations between the texts of 1656 and 1659 are chiefly literal, but a careful collation has enabled me to rectify one or two errors of the press in LUCASTA.

<95.2> Lovelace refers to the lines which Hall wrote in commendation of LUCASTA, 1649.

<95.3> The HORAE VACIVAE of Hall, 1646, 16mo., are here meant.

<95.4> See Beloe's translation of Aulus Gellius, ii. 86.

<95.5> HORAE VACIVAE, or Essays and some Occasional Considerations. Lond. 1646, 16mo., with a portrait of Hall by William Marshall, au. aet. 19.

<95.6> Sampson.

<95.7> Scanderbeg, whose real name was George Castriot. CASTRIOT is also one of the DRAMATIS PERSONAE in Fletcher'<s> KNIGHT OF MALTA.

<95.8> So the text of 165 , .e. <sic> of the lines as originally written by the poet. Lucasta, <1>659, erroneously has THIS.

<95.9> "And he found a new jawbone of an ass, and put forth his hand and took it, and slew a thousand men therewith."—JUDGES, xv. 15.

<95.10> i.e. withstand.

<95.11> So the text of 1656. LUCASTA has WROUGHT.

## TRANSLATIONES / TRANSLATIONS.

<----->

### SANAZARI HEXASTICON.

Viderat Adriacis quondam Neptunus in undis  
Stare urbem et toto ponere Jura mari:  
Nunc mihi Tarpeias<96.1> quantumvis, Jupiter, Arces  
Objice et illa mihi moenia Martis, ait,  
Seu pelago Tibrim praefers, urbem aspice utramque,  
Illam homines dices, hanc posuisse deos.

### SANAZAR'S HEXASTICK.

In Adriatick waves when Neptune saw,  
The city stand, and give the seas a law:  
Now i' th' Tarpeian tow'rs Jove rival me,  
And Mars his walls impregnable, said he;  
Let seas to Tyber yield; view both their ods!<96.2>  
You'l grant that built by men, but this by gods.

<96.1> Rome.

<96.2> Points of difference or contrast. For LET SEAS, &c., we ought to read SHALL SEAS, &c.

<----->

### IN VIRGILIUM. PENTADII.

Pastor, arator, eques; pavi, colui, superavi;  
Capras, rus, hostes; fronde, ligone, manu.

### IN ENGLISH.

A swain, hind, knight: I fed, till'd, did command:  
Goats, fields, my foes: with leaves, a spade, my hand.

<----->

### DE SCAEVOLA.

Lictorem pro rege necans nunc mutius ultro  
Sacrifico propriam concremat igne manum:  
Miratur Porsenna virum, paenamque relaxans  
Maxima cum obscessis faedera a victor init,  
Plus flammis patriae confert quam fortibus armis,  
Una domans bellum funere dextra sua.

### ENGLISHED.

The hand, by which no king but serjeant<97.1> dies,



Mutius in fire doth freely sacrifice;  
The prince admires the Hero, quits his pains,  
And Victor from the seige peace entertains;  
Rome's more oblig'd to flames than arms or pow'r,  
When one burnt hand shall the whole war devour.<97.2>

<97.1> A somewhat imperfect rendering of LICTOR.

<97.2> The reader will easily judge for himself of the valueless character of these translations; but it is only just to Lovelace to suggest that they were probably academic exercises only, and at the same time to submit that they are not much worse than Marlowe's translation of Ovid, and many other versions of the Classics then current.

<----->

**DE CATONE.**

Invictus victis in partibus omnia Caesar  
Vincere qui potuit, te, Cato, non potuit.

**OF CATO.**

The world overcome, victorious Caesar, he  
That conquer'd all, great Cato, could not thee.

<----->

**ITEM.**

Ictu non potuit primo Cato solvere vitam;  
Defecit tanto vulnere victa manus:  
Altius inseruit digitos, qua spiritus ingens  
Exiret, magnum dextera fecit iter.  
Opposuit fortuna moram, involvitque, Catonis  
Scires ut ferro plus valuisse manum.

**ANOTHER.**

One stabbe could not fierce Cato's<98.1> life unty;  
Onely his hand of all that wound did dy.  
Deeper his fingers tear to make a way  
Open, through which his mighty soul might stray.  
Fortune made this delay to let us know,  
That Cato's hand more then his sword could do.

<98.1> Cato of Utica.

<----->

**ITEM.**

Jussa manus sacri pectus violare Catonis  
Haesit, et inceptum victa reliquit opus.  
Ille ait, infesto contra sua vulnera vultu:  
Estne aliquid, magnus quod Cato non potuit?

**ANOTHER.**

The hand of sacred Cato, bad to tear  
His breast, did start, and the made wound forbear;  
Then to the gash he said with angry brow:  
And is there ought great Cato cannot do?

<----->

**ITEM.**

Dextera, quid dubitas? durum est jugulare Catonem;

Sed modo liber erit: jam puto non dubitas!  
Fas non est vivo quenquam servire Catone,  
Nedum ipsum vincit nunc Cato si moritur.

**ANOTHER.**

What doubt'st thou, hand? sad Cato 'tis to kill;  
But he'll be free: sure, hand, thou doubt'st not still!  
Cato alive, 'tis just all men be free:  
Nor conquers he himself, now if he die.

<----->

**PENTADII.**

Non est, fulleris, haec beata non est  
Quod vos creditis esse, vita non est:  
Fulgentes manibus videre gemmas  
Et testudineo jacere lecto,  
Aut pluma latus abdidisse molli,  
Aut auro bibere, aut cubare cocco;  
Regales dapibus gravare mensas,  
Et quicquid Lybico secatur arvo;  
Non una positum tenere cella:  
Sed nullos trepidum timere casus,  
Nec vano populi favore tangi,  
Et stricto nihil aestuare ferro:  
Hoc quisquis poterit, licebit illi  
Fortunam moveat loco superbus.

**ENGLISHED.**

It is not, y' are deceav'd, it is not blisse  
What you conceive a happy living is:  
To have your hands with rubies bright to glow,  
Then on your tortoise-bed your body throw,  
And sink your self in down, to drink in gold,  
And have your looser self in purple roll'd;  
With royal fare to make the tables groan,  
Or else with what from Lybick fields is mown,  
Nor in one vault hoard all your magazine,  
But at no cowards fate t' have frighted bin;  
Nor with the peoples breath to be swol'n great,  
Nor at a drawn stiletto basely swear.  
He that dares this, nothing to him's unfit,  
But proud o' th' top of fortunes wheel may sit.

<----->

**AD M. T. CICERONEM. CATUL EP. 50.**

Disertissime Romuli nepotum,  
Quot sunt, quotque fuere, Marce Tulli,  
Quotque post alios erunt in annos,  
Gratias tibi maximas Catullus  
Agit, pessimus omnium poeta:  
Tanto pessimus omnium poeta,  
Quanto tu optimus omnium patronus.

**TO MARCUS T. CICERO. IN AN ENGLISH PENTASTICK.**

Tully to thee, Rome's eloquent sole heir,  
The best of all that are, shall be, and were,  
I the worst poet send my best thanks and pray'r:  
Ev'n by how much the worst of poets I,  
By so much you the best of patrones be.

<----->

**AD JUVENCIUM. CAT. EP. 49.**

Mellitos oculos tuos, Juvenci,  
Si quis me sinat usque basiare,  
Usque ad millia basiem trecenta;  
Nec unquam videat satur futurus:  
Non si densior aridis aristis,  
Sit nostrae seges osculationis.

**TO JUVENCIUS.**

Juvencius, thy fair sweet eyes  
If to my fill that I may kisse,  
Three hundred thousand times I'de kisse,  
Nor future age should cloy this blisse;  
No, not if thicker than ripe ears  
The harvest of our kisses bears.

<----->

**DE PUERO ET PRAECONE. CATUL.**

Cum puero bello praeconem qui videt esse,  
Quid credat, nisi se vendere discupere?

**CATUL.**

With a fair boy a cryer we behold,  
What should we think, but he would not be sold?<99.1>

<99.1> Lovelace has made nonsense of this passage. We ought to read rather, "but that he would be sold!"

<----->

**PORTII LICINII.**

Si Phoebi soror es, mando tibi, Delia, causam,  
Scilicet, ut fratri quae peto verba feras:  
Marmore Sicanio struxi tibi, Delphice, templum,  
Et levibus calamis candida verba dedi.  
Nunc, si nos audis, atque es divinus Apollo,  
Dic mihi, qui nummos non habet unde petat.

**ENGLISHED.**

If you are Phoebus sister, Delia, pray,  
This my request unto the Sun convey:  
O Delphick god, I built thy marble fane,  
And sung thy praises with a gentle cane,<100.1>  
Now, if thou art divine Apollo, tell,  
Where he, whose purse is empty, may go fill.

<100.1> Reed or pipe.

<----->

**SENECAE EX CLEANTHE.**

Duc me, Parens celsique Dominator poli,  
Quocunque placuit, nulla parendi mora est;  
Adsum impiger; fac nolle, comitabor gemens,  
Malusque patiar facere, quod licuit bono.  
Ducunt volentem Fata, nolentem trahunt.

**ENGLISHED.**

Parent and Prince of Heav'n, O lead, I pray,  
Where ere you please, I follow and obey.  
Active I go, sighing, if you gainsay,  
And suffer bad what to the good was law.  
Fates lead the willing, but unwilling draw.

<----->

**QUINTI CATULI.**

Constiteram exorientem Auroram forte salutans,  
Cum subito a laeva Roscius exoritur.  
Pace mihi liceat, coelestes, dicere vestra.  
Mortalis visu pulchrior esse deo.  
Blanditur puero satyrus vultuque manueque;  
Nolenti similis retrahit ora puer:  
Quem non commoveat, quamvis de marmore? fundit  
Pene preces satyrus, pene puer lachrymas.

**ENGLISHED.**

As once I had good morning to the day,  
O' th' sudden Roscius breaks in a bright ray:  
Gods with your favour, I've presum'd to see  
A mortal fairer then a deitie.  
With looks and hands a satyre courts the boy,  
Who draws back his unwilling cheek as coy.  
Although of marble hewn, whom move not they?  
The boy ev'n seems to weep, the satyre, pray.

<----->

**FLORIDI. DE EBRIOSO.**

Phoebus me in somnis vetuit potare Lyaeum,  
Pareo praeceptis: tunc bibo cum vigilo.

**OF A DRUNKARD.**

Phoebus asleep forbad me wine to take:  
I yield; and now am only drunk awake.

<----->

**DE ASINO QUI DENTIBUS AENEIDEM CONSUMPSIT.**

Carminis iliaci libros consumpsit asellus;  
Hoc fatum Troiae est: aut equus, aut asinus.

**THE ASSE EATING THE AENEIDS.**

A wretched asse the Aeneids did destroy:  
A horse or asse is still the fate of Troy.

<----->

**AUSONIUS LIB. EPIG.**

Trinari quodam currentem in littoris ora  
Ante canes leporem caeruleus rapuit;  
At<101.1> lepus: in me omnis terrae pelagique rapina est,  
Forsitan et coeli, si canis astra tenet.

**ENGLISHED.**

On the Sicilian strand a hare well wrought  
Before the hounds was by a dog-fish caught;  
Quoth she: all rape of sea and earth's on me,  
Perhaps of heav'n, if there a dog-star be.

<101.1> Qu. a contraction of AIT.

<----->

**AUSONIUS LIB. EPIG.**

Polla, potentia, tribon, baculus, scyphus: arcta supellex  
Haec fuerant Cinici, sed putat hanc nimiam:  
Namque cavis manibus cernens potare bubulcum,  
Cur, scyphe, te, dixit, gusto supervacuum?

**ENGLISHED.**

The Cynicks narrow houshold stuffe of crutch,  
A stool and dish, was lumber thought too much:  
For whilst a hind drinks out on's palms o' th' strand  
He flings his dish: cries: I've one in my hand!

<----->

**AUSONIUS LIB. I. EPIG.**

Thesauro invento qui limina mortis inibat,  
Liquit ovans laqueum, quo periturus erat;  
At qui, quod terrae abdiderat, non repperit aurum,  
Quem laqueum invenit nexuit, et periit.

**ENGLISHED.**

A treasure found one, entring at death's gate,  
Triumphing leaves that cord, was meant his fate;  
But he the gold missing, which he did hide,  
The halter which he found he knit: so dy'd.

<----->

**A LA CHABOT.**

Object adorable et charmant!  
Mes soupirs et mes pleurs tesmoignent mon torment;  
Mais mon respect<102.1> m'empeche de parler.  
Ah! que peine dissimuler!  
Et que je souffre de martyre,  
D'aimer et de n'oser le dire!

**TO THE SAME AYRE IN ENGLISH, THUS,**

Object adorable of charms!  
My sighs and tears may testifie my harms;  
But my respect forbids me to reveal.  
Ah, what a pain 'tis to conceal!  
And how I suffer worse then hell,  
To love, and not to dare to tell!

<102.1> Original has MES RESPECTS.

<----->

**THEOPHILE BEING DENY'D HIS ADDRESSES TO KING JAMES, TURNED THE AFFRONT TO HIS OWN GLORY IN THIS EPIGRAM.**

Si Jaques, le Roy du scavior,  
Ne trouue bon de me voir,

Voila la cause infallible!  
Car, ravy de mon escrit,  
Il creut, que j'estois tout esprit  
Et par consequent invisible.

**LINEALLY TRANSLATED OUT OF THE FRENCH.**

If James, the king of wit,  
To see me thought not fit,  
Sure this the cause hath been,  
That, ravish'd with my merit,  
He thought I was all spirit,  
And so not to be seen.

<----->

**AUSONIUS.**

Vane, quid affectas faciem mihi ponere, pictor,  
Ignotamque oculis sollicitare manu?  
Aeris et venti sum filia, mater inanis  
Indicii, vocemque sine mente gero.  
Auribus in vestris habito penetrabilis echo;  
Si mihi vis similem pingere, pinge sonos.

**IN ENGLISH.**

Vain painter, why dost strive my face to draw  
With busy hands? a goddesses eyes nere saw.  
Daughter of air and wind, I do rejoyce  
In empty shouts; (without a mind) a voice.  
Within your ears shrill echo I rebound,  
And, if you'l paint me like, then paint a sound.

<----->

**AUSON[IUS].**

Toxica zelotypo dedit uxor maecha marito,  
Nec satis ad mortem credidit esse datum;  
Miscuit argenti lethalia pondera vivi,  
Ut celeret certam vis geminata necem.  
Ergo, inter sese dum noxia pocula certant,  
Cessit lethalis noxa saltuiferi.  
Protinus in vacuos alvi petiere recessus,  
Lubrica dejectis quae via nota cibus.  
Quam pia cura Deum! prodest crudelior uxor.  
Sic, cum fata volunt, bina venena juvant.

**IN ENGLISH.**

Her jealous husband an adultresse gave  
Cold poysons, to[o] weak she thought for's grave;  
A fatal dose of quicksilver then she  
Mingles to hast his double destinie;  
Now whilst within themselves they are at strife,  
The deadly potion yields to that of life,  
And straight from th' hollow stomach both retreat  
To th' slippery pipes known to digested meat.  
Strange care o' th' gods the murth'resse doth avail!  
So, when fates please, ev'n double poysons heal.

<----->

**AUSONIUS EPIG.**

Emptis quod libris tibi bibliotheca referta est,  
Doctum et grammaticum te, philomuse, putas.  
Quinetiam cytharas, chordas et barbita conde:  
Mercator hodie, cras citharoedus, eris.

**IN ENGLISH.**

Because with bought books, sir, your study's fraught,  
A learned grammarian you would fain be thought;  
Nay then, buy lutes and strings; so you may play  
The merchant now, the fidler, the next day.

<----->

AVIENI<103.1> V. C. AD AMICOS.

Rure morans, quid agam, respondi, pauca rogatus:  
Mane, deum exoro famulos, post arvaque viso,  
Partitusque meis justos indico labores;  
Inde lego, Phoebumque cio, Musamque laccio;  
Tunc oleo corpus fingo, mollique palaestra  
Stringo libens animo, gaudensque ac foenore liber  
Prandeo, poto, cano, ludo, lavo, caeno, quiesco.

**ENGLISHED.**

Ask'd in the country what I did, I said:  
I view my men and meads, first having pray'd;  
Then each of mine hath his just task outlay'd;  
I read, Apollo court, I rouse my Muse;  
Then I anoynt me, and stript willing loose  
My self on a soft plat, from us'ry blest;  
I dine, drink, sing, play, bath, I sup, I rest.

<103.1> Rufus Festus Avienus, the Latin poet.

<----->

**AD FABULLUM. CATUL. LIB. I. EP. 13.**

Caenabis bene, mi Fabulle, apud me  
Paucis, si dii tibi favent, diebus;  
Si tecum attuleris bonam atque magnam  
Caenam, non sine candida puella,  
Et vino, et sale, et omnibus cachinnis.  
Haec si, inquam, attuleris, Fabulle noster,  
Caenabis bene: nam tui Catulli  
Plenus sacculus est aranearum.  
Sed, contra, accipies meros amores,  
Seu quod suavius elegantiusve est:  
Nam unguentum dabo, quod meae puellae  
Donarunt Veneres Cupidinesque;  
Quod tu cum olfacies, deos rogabis,  
Totum te faciant, Fabulle, nasum.

**ENGLISHED.**

Fabullus, I will treat you handsomely  
Shortly, if the kind gods will favour thee.  
If thou dost bring with thee a del'cate messe,  
An olio or so, a pretty lass,  
Brisk wine, sharp tales, all sorts of drollery,  
These if thou bringst (I say) along with thee,  
You shall feed highly, friend: for, know, the ebbs  
Of my lank purse are full of spiders webs;  
But then again you shall receive clear love,  
Or what more grateful or more sweet may prove:

For with an ointment I will favour thee  
My Venus's and Cupids gave to me,  
Of which once smelt, the gods thou wilt implore,  
Fabullus, that they'd make thee nose all ore.

<----->

**MART. LIB. I. EPI. 14.**

Casta suo gladium cum traderet Arria Paeto,  
Quem de visceribus traxerat ipsa suis;  
Si qua fides, vulnus quod feci non dolet, inquit:  
Sed quod tu facies, hoc mihi, Paete, dolet.

**ENGLISHED.**

When brave chast Arria to her Poetus gave  
The sword from her own breast did bleeding wave:  
If there be faith, this wound smarts not, said she;  
But what you'l make, ah, that will murder me.

<----->

**MART. EPI. XLIII. LIB. I.**

Conjugis audisset fatum cum Portia Bruti,  
Et substracta sibi quaereret arma dolor,  
Nondum scitis, ait, mortem non posse negari,  
Credideram satis hoc vos docuisse patrem.  
Dixit, et ardentem avido bibit ore favillas.  
I nunc, et ferrum turba molesta nega.

**IN ENGLISH.**

When Portia her dear lord's sad fate did hear,  
And noble grief sought arms were hid from her:  
Know you not yet no hinderance of death is,  
Cato, I thought, enough had taught you this,  
So said, her thirsty lips drink flaming coales:  
Go now, deny me steel, officious fools!

<----->

**MART. EP. XV. LIB. 6.**

Dum Phaetontea formica vagatur in umbra,  
Implicuit tenuem succina gutta feram,  
Dignum tantorum pretium tulit illa laborum:  
Credibile est ipsam sic voluisse mori.

**ENGLISHED.**

Whilst in an amber-shade the ant doth feast,  
A gummy drop ensnares the small wild-beast,  
A full reward of all her toyls hath she;  
'Tis to be thought she would her self so die.

<----->

**MAR. LIB. IV. EP. 33.**

Et latet et lucet, Phaetontide condita gutta  
Ut videatur apis nectare clausa suo.  
Sic modo, quae fuerat vita contempta manente,  
Funeribus facta est jam preciosa suis.

**IN ENGLISH.**



Both lurks and shines, hid in an amber tear,  
The bee, in her own nectar prisoner;  
So she, who in her life time was contemn'd,  
Ev'n in her very funerals is gemm'd.

<----->

**MART. LIB. VIII. EP. 19.**

Pauper videri Cinna vult, et est pauper.

**IN ENGLISH.**

Cinna seems<104.1> poor in show,  
And he is so.

<104.1> A very inadequate translation of VIDERI VULT.

<----->

OUT OF THE ANTHOLOGIE.<105.1>

<<Esbese ton lychnon moros phyllon apo pollon Daknomenos, lexas ouk eti me blepete.>>

**IN AN ENGLISH DISTICK.**

A fool, much bit by fleas, put out the light;  
You shall not see me now (quoth he); good night.

<105.1> This is from Lucian.

<----->

**IN RUFUM. CATUL. EP. 64.**

Noli admirari, quare tibi foemina nulla,  
Rufe, velit tenerum supposuisse femur;  
Non ullam rarae labefactes munere vestis,  
Aut pellucidulis deliciis lapidis.  
Laedit te quaedam mala fabula, qua tibi fertur  
Valle sub alarum trux habitare caper.  
Hunc metuunt omnes, neque mirum: nam mala valde est  
Bestia, nec quicum<106.1> bela puella cubet.  
Quare aut crudelem nasorum interfice pestem,  
Aut admirari desine, cur fugiant.

**TO RUFUS.**

That no fair woman will, wonder not why,  
Clap (Rufus) under thine her tender thigh;  
Not a silk gown shall once melt one of them,  
Nor the delights of a transparent gemme.  
A scurvy story kills thee, which doth tell,  
That in thine armpits a fierce goat doth dwell.  
Him they all fear full of an ugly stench:<106.2>  
Nor 's 't fit he should lye with a handsome wench;  
Wherefore this noses cursed plague first crush,  
Or cease to wonder, why they fly you thus.

<106.1> An archaic form of QUOCUM.

<106.2> Original has STINCH.

<----->

**CATUL. EP. 71.**

**DE INCONSTANTIA FOEMINEI AMORIS.**

Nulli se dicit mulier mea nubere velle,  
Quam mihi: non, si Jupiter ipse petat;  
Dicit; sed mulier cupido quod dicit amanti,  
In vento et rapida scribere oportet aqua.

**FEMALE INCONSTANCY.**

My mistresse sayes she'll marry none but me;  
No, not if Jove himself a suitor be.  
She sayes so; but what women say to kind  
Lovers, we write in rapid streams and wind.

<----->

**AD LESBIAM, CAT. EP. 73.**

Dicebas quondam, solum to nosse Catullum,  
Lesbia, nec prae me velle tenere Jovem;  
Dilexi tum te, non tantum ut vulgus amicam,  
Sed pater ut gnatos diligit et generos.  
Nunc te cognovi, quare et impensius uror,  
Multo mi tamen es vilior et levior.  
Qui potis est inquis, quod amantem injuria talis  
Cogat amare magis, sed bene velle minus?  
Odi et amo; quare id faciam, fortasse requiris;  
Nescio; sed fieri sentio, et excrucior.

**ENGLISHED.**

That me alone you lov'd, you once did say,  
Nor should I to the king of gods give way.  
Then I lov'd thee not as a common dear,  
But as a father doth his children chear.  
Now thee I know, more bitterly I smart;  
Yet thou to me more light and cheaper art.  
What pow'r is this? that such a wrong should press  
Me to love more, yet wish thee well much lesse.  
I hate and love; would'st thou the reason know?  
I know not; but I burn, and feel it so.

<----->

**IN LESBIAM CAT. EP. 76.**

Huc est mens deducta tua, mea Lesbia, culpa,  
Atque ita se officio perdidit ipsa suo.  
Ut jam nec bene velle queam tibi, si optima sias:  
Nec desistere amare, omnia si facias.

**ENGLISHED.**

By thy fault is my mind brought to that pass,  
That it its office quite forgotten has:  
For be'est thou best, I cannot wish thee well,  
And be'est thou worst, then I must love thee still.

<----->

**AD QUINTIUM. CAT. EP. 83.**

Quinti, si tibi vis oculos debere Catullum,  
Aut aliud si quid carius est oculis,  
Eripere ei noli, multo quod carius illi  
Est oculis, seu quid carius est oculis.

**TO QUINTIUS.**

Quintius, if you'l endear Catullus eyes,  
Or what he dearer then his eyes doth prize,  
Ravish not what is dearer then his eyes,  
Or what he dearer then his eyes doth prize.

<----->

**DE QUINTIA ET LESBIA. EP. 87.**

Quintia formosa est multis, mihi candida, longa,  
Recta est; haec ego sic singula confiteor:  
Tota illud formosa nego: nam multa venustas;  
Nulla in tam magno est corpore mica salis.  
Lesbia formosa est quae, cum pulcherrima tota est,  
Tum omnibus una omneis surripuit veneres.

**ENGLISHED.**

Quintia is handsome, fair, tall, straight: all these  
Very particulars I grant with ease:  
But she all ore 's not handsome; here's her fault:  
In all that bulk there's not one corne of salt,  
Whilst Lesbia, fair and handsome too all ore,  
All graces and all wit from all hath bore.

<----->

**DE SUO IN LESBIAM AMORE. EP. 88.**

Nulla potest mulier tantum se dicere amatam  
Vere, quantum a me Lesbia amata mea est;  
Nulla fides ullo fuit unquam faedere tanta,  
Quanta in amore suo ex parte reperta mea est.

**ENGLISHED.**

No one can boast her self so much belov'd,  
Truely as Lesbia my affections prov'd;  
No faith was ere with such a firm knot bound,  
As in my love on my part I have found.

<----->

**AD SYLONEM. EP. 104.**

Aut sodes mihi redde decem sestertia, Sylo,  
Deindo esto quam vis saevus et indomitus;  
Aut si te nummi delectant, desine, quaeso,  
Leno esse, atque idem saevus et indomitus.

**ENGLISHED.**

Sylo, pray pay me my ten sesterces,  
Then rant and roar as much as you shall please;  
Or if that mony takes [you,]<107.1> pray, give ore  
To be a pimp, or else to rant and roar.

<107.1> Original has TAKES, but a word is wanting to complete the metre, and perhaps the poet wrote TAKES YOU, i.e. captivates you.

<----->

**ELEGIES**

To the Memory of the  
AUTHOR:

By several of his Friends.

Collected and Published  
BY  
D. P. L.

NUNQUAM EGO TE VITA FRATER AMBILIOR  
ADSPICIAM POSTHAC; AT CERTE SEMPER AMABO.  
Catullus.

LONDON, Printed 1660.

## ELEGIES.

TO THE MEMORY OF MY WORTHY FRIEND  
COLL. RICHARD LOVELACE. <108.1>

To pay my love to thee, and pay it so,  
As honest men should what they justly owe,  
Were to write better of thy life, then can  
The assured'st pen of the most worthy man.  
Such was thy composition, such thy mind,  
Improv'd from vertue, and from vice refin'd;  
Thy youth an abstract of the world's best parts,  
Invr'd to arms and exercis'd to arts,  
Which, with the vigour of a man, became  
Thine and thy countries piramids of fame.  
Two glorious lights to guide our hopeful youth  
Into the paths of honour and of truth.

These parts (so rarely met) made up in thee,  
What man should in his full perfection be:  
So sweet a temper into every sence  
And each affection breath'd an influence,  
As smooth'd them to a calme, which still withstood  
The ruffling passions of untamed blood,  
Without a wrinkle in thy face, to show  
Thy stable breast could a <108.2> disturbance know.  
In fortune humble, constant in mischance;  
Expert in both, and both serv'd to advance  
Thy name by various trialls of thy spirit,  
And give the testimony of thy merit.  
Valiant to envy of the bravest men,  
And learned to an undisputed pen;  
Good as the best in both and great, but yet  
No dangerous courage nor offensive wit.  
These ever serv'd the one for to defend,  
The other, nobly to advance thy friend,  
Under which title I have found my name  
Fix'd in the living chronicle of fame  
To times succeeding: yet I hence must go,  
Displeas'd I cannot celebrate thee so.  
But what respect, acknowledgement and love,  
What these together, when improv'd, improve:  
Call it by any name (so it express  
Ought like a tribute to thy worthyness,  
And may my bounden gratitude become)  
LOVELACE, I offer at thy honour'd tomb.

And though thy vertues many friends have bred  
To love thee liveing, and lament thee dead,  
In characters far better couch'd then these,  
Mine will not blott thy fame, nor theirs encrease.  
'Twas by thine own great merits rais'd so high,  
That, maugre time and fate, it shall not dye.

Sic flevit.

Charles Cotton.

<108.1> These lines may be found, with some verbal variations, in the poems of Charles Cotton, 1689, p. 481-2-3.

<108.2> This reading is adopted from Cotton's Poems, 1689, p. 482. In LUCASTA we read NO DISTURBANCE.

UPON THE POSTHUME AND PRECIOUS POEMS  
OF THE NOBLY EXTRACTED GENTLEMAN MR. R. L.<109.1>

The rose and<109.2> other fragrant flowers smell best,  
When they are pluck'd and worn in hand or brest,  
So this fair flow'r of vertue, this rare bud  
Of wit, smells now as fresh as when he stood;  
And in these Posthume-Poems lets us know,  
He on<109.3> the banks of Helicon did grow.  
The beauty of his soul did correspond  
With his sweet out-side: nay, it went<109.4> beyond.

Lovelace, the minion<109.5> of the Thespian dames,  
Apollo's darling, born with Enthean flames,  
Which in his numbers wave and shine so clear,  
As sparks refracted from<109.6> rich gemmes appear;  
Such flames that may inspire, and atoms cast,  
To make new poets not like him in hast.<109.7>

Jam. Howell.

<109.1> These lines, originally printed as above, were included by Payne Fisher in his collection of Howell's Poems, 1663, 8vo., where they may be found at p. 126. Fisher altered the superscription in his ill-edited book to "Upon the Posthume-POEMS of Mr. Lovelace."

<109.2> WITH—Howell's Poems.

<109.3> THAT HE UPON—ibid.

<109.4> IF NOT GO BEYOND—ibid.

<109.5> Fr. MIGNON, darling.

<109.6> So in Howell's Poems. LUCASTA has IN.

<109.7> "Such sparks that with their atoms may inspire  
The reader with a pure POETICK fire."

Howell's POEMS.

AN ELEGIE,

**SACRED TO THE MEMORY OF MY LATE HONOURED FRIEND, COLLONELL RICHARD LOVELACE.**

Pardon (blest shade), that I thus crowd to be  
'Mong those that sin unto thy memory,  
And that I think unvalu'd reliques spread,  
And am the first that pillages the dead;  
Since who would be thy mourner as befits,  
But an officious sacriledge commits.  
How my tears strive to do thee fairer right,  
And from the characters divide my sight.

Untill it (dimmer) a new torrent swells,  
And what obscur'd it, falls my spectacles  
Let the luxurious floods impulsive rise,  
As they would not be wept, but weep the eyes,  
The while earth melts, and we above it lye  
But the weak bubbles of mortalitie;  
Untill our griefs are drawn up by the Sun,  
And that (too) drop the exhalation.

How in thy dust we humble now our pride,  
And bring thee a whole people mortifi'd!  
For who expects not death, now thou art gone,  
Shows his low folly, not religion.

Can the poetick heaven still hold on  
The golden dance, when the first mover's gon?  
And the snatch'd fires (which circularly hurl'd)  
In their strong rapture glimmer to the world,  
And not stupendiously rather rise  
The tapers unto these solemnities?

Can the chords move in tune, when thou dost dye,  
At once their universal harmony?

But where Apollo's harp (with murmur) laid,  
Had to the stones a melody convey'd,  
They by some pebble summon'd would reply  
In loud results to every battery;  
Thus do we come unto thy marble room,  
To eccho from the musick of thy tombe.

May we dare speak thee dead, that wouldest be  
In thy remove only not such as we?  
No wonder, the advance is from us hid;  
Earth could not lift thee higher then it did!  
And thou, that didst grow up so ever nigh,  
Art but now gone to immortality!  
So near to where thou art, thou here didst dwell,  
The change to thee is less perceptible.

Thy but unably-comprehending clay,  
To what could not be circumscrib'd, gave way,  
And the more spacious tennant to return,  
Crack'd (in the two restrain'd estate) its urn.  
That is but left to a successive trust;  
The soul's first buried in his bodies dust.

Thou more thy self, now thou art less confin'd,  
Art not concern'd in what is left behind;  
While we sustain the losse that thou art gone,  
Un-essenc'd in the separation;  
And he that weeps thy funerall, in one  
Is pious to the widdow'd nation.

And under what (now) covert must I sing,  
Secure as if beneath a cherub's wing;  
When thou hast tane thy flight hence, and art nigh  
In place to some related hierarchie,  
Where a bright wreath of glories doth but set  
Upon thy head an equal coronet;  
And thou, above our humble converse gon,  
Canst but be reach'd by contemplation.

Our lutes (as thine was touch'd) were vocall by,  
And thence receiv'd the soul by sympathy,  
That did above the threds inspiring creep,  
And with soft whispers broke the am'rous sleep;  
Which now no more (mov'd with the sweet surprise)  
Awake into delicious rapsodies;  
But with their silent mistress do comply,  
And fast in undisturbed slumbers lye.

How from thy first ascent thou didst disperse  
A blushing warmth throughout the universe,

While near the morns Lucasta's fires did glow,  
And to the earth a purer dawn did throw.  
We ever saw thee in the roll of fame  
Advancing thy already deathless name;  
And though it could but be above its fate,  
Thou would'st, however, super-errogate.

Now as in Venice, when the wanton State  
Before a Spaniard spread their crowded plate,  
He made it the sage business of his eye  
To find the root of the wild treasury;  
So learn't from that exchequer but the more  
To rate his masters vegetable ore.  
Thus when the Greek and Latin muse we read,  
As but the cold inscriptions of the dead,  
We to advantage then admired thee,  
Who did'st live on still with thy poesie;  
And in our proud enjoyments never knew  
The end of the unruly wealth that grew.  
But now we have the last dear ingots gain'd,  
And the free vein (however rich) is drein'd;  
Though what thou hast bequeathed us, no space  
Of this worlds span of time shall ere embrace.  
But as who sometimes knew not to conclude  
Upon the waters strange vicissitude,  
Did to the ocean himself commit,  
That it might comprehend what could not it,  
So we in our endeavours must out-done  
Be swallowed up within thy Helicon.

Thou, who art layd up in thy precious cave,  
And from the hollow spaces of thy grave,  
We still may mourn in tune, but must alone  
Hereafter hope to quaver out a grone;  
No more the chirping sonnets with shrill notes  
Must henceforth volley from our treble throtes;  
But each sad accent must be humour'd well  
To the deep solemn organ of thy cell.

Why should some rude hand carve thy sacred stone,  
And there incise a cheap inscription?  
When we can shed the tribute of our tears  
So long, till the relenting marble wears;  
Which shall such order in their cadence keep,  
That they a native epitaph shall weep;  
Untill each letter spelt distinctly lyes,  
Cut by the mystick droppings of our eyes.

El. Revett.<110.3>

<110.1> Original has THE BUT.

<110.2> Original has OW.

<110.3> I have already pointed out, that the author of these truly wretched lines was probably the same person, on whose MORAL AND DIVINE POEMS Lovelace has some verses in the LUCASTA. The poems of E. R. appear to be lost, which, unless they were far superior to the present specimen, cannot be regarded as a great calamity.

## AN ELEGIE.

Me thinks, when kings, prophets, and poets dye,  
We should not bid men weep, nor ask them why,  
But the great loss should by instinct impair  
The nations, like a pestilential ayr,  
And in a moment men should feel the cramp  
Of grief, like persons poyson'd with a damp.  
All things in nature should their death deplore,

And the sun look less lovely than before;  
 The fixed stars should change their constant spaces,  
 And comets cast abroad their flagrant<111.1> faces.  
 Yet still we see princes and poets fall  
 Without their proper pomp of funerall;  
 Men look about, as if they nere had known  
 The poets lawrell or the princes crown;  
 Lovelace hath long been dead, and he<111.2> can be  
 Oblig'd to no man for an elegie.  
 Are you all turn'd to silence, or did he  
 Retain the only sap of poesie,  
 That kept all branches living? must his fall  
 Set an eternal period upon all?  
 So when a spring-tide doth begin to fly<111.3>  
 From the green shoar, each neighbouring creek grows dry.  
 But why do I so pettishly detract  
 An age that is so perfect, so exact?  
 In all things excellent, it is a fame  
 Or glory to deceased Lovelace name:  
 For he is weak in wit, who doth deprave  
 Anothers worth to make his own seem brave;  
 And this was not his aim: nor is it mine.  
 I now conceive the scope of their designe,  
 Which is with one consent to bring and burn  
 Contributory incence on his urn,  
 Where each mans love and fancy shall be try'd,  
 As when great Johnson or brave Shakespear dyed.  
 Wits must unite: for ignorance, we see,  
 Hath got a great train of artillerie:  
 Yet neither shall nor can it blast the fame  
 And honour of deceased Lovelace name,  
 Whose own LUCASTA can support his credit  
 Amongst all such who knowingly have read it;  
 But who that praise can by desert discusse  
 Due to those poems that are posthumous?  
 And if the last conceptions are the best,  
 Those by degrees do much transcend the rest;  
 So full, so fluent, that they richly sute  
 With Orpheus lire, or with Anacreons lute,  
 And he shall melt his wing, that shall aspire  
 To reach a fancy or one accent higher.  
 Holland and France have known his nobler parts,  
 And found him excellent in arms and arts.  
 To sum up all, few men of fame but know,  
 He was TAM MARTI, QUAM MERCURIO.<111.4>

<111.1> Burning.

<111.2> Original has WE.

<111.3> A fine image!

<111.4> The motto originally employed by George Gascoigne, who, like Lovelace, wielded both the sword and the pen.

## TO HIS NOBLE FRIEND CAPT. DUDLEY LOVELACE UPON HIS EDITION OF HIS BROTHERS POEMS.

Thy pious hand, planting fraternal bayes,  
 Deserving is of most egregious praise;  
 Since 'tis the organ doth to us convey  
 From a descended sun so bright a ray.  
 Clear spirit! how much we are bound to thee  
 For this so great a liberalitie,



The truer worth of which by much exceeds  
The western wealth, which such contention breeds!  
Like the Infusing-God, from the well-head  
Of poesie you have besprinkled  
Our brows with holy drops, the very last,  
Which from your Brother's happy pen were cast:  
Yet as the last, the best; such matchlesse skill  
From his divine alembick did distill.  
Your honour'd Brother in the Elyzian shade  
Will joy to know himself a laureat made  
By your religious care, and that his urn  
Doth him on earth immortal life return.  
Your self you have a good physician shown  
To his much grieved friends and to your own,  
In giving this elixir'd medecine,  
For greatest grief a soveraign anodine.

Sir, from your Brother y' have convey'd us bliss;  
Now, since your genius so concurs with his,  
Let your own quill our next enjoyments frame;  
All must be rich, that's grac'd with Lovelace name.  
Symon Ognell M.D.<112.1> Coningbrens.

<112.1> This person is not mentioned in Munk's Roll of the Royal College of Physicians, 1861.

## ON THE TRULY HONOURABLE COLL. RICHARD LOVELACE, OCCASIONED BY THE PUBLICATION OF HIS POSTHUME-POEMS.

### ELEGIE.

Great son of Mars, and of Minerva too!  
With what oblations must we come to woo  
Thy sacred soul to look down from above,  
And see how much thy memory we love,  
Whose happy pen so pleased amorous ears,  
And, lifting bright LUCASTA to the spears,  
Her in the star-bespangled orb did set  
Above fair Ariadnes coronet,  
Leaving a pattern to succeeding wits,  
By which to sing forth their Pythonick fits.  
Shall we bring tears and sighs? no, no! then we  
Should but bemone our selves for loosing thee,  
Or else thy happiness seem to deny,  
Or to repine at thy felicity.  
Then, whilst we chant out thine immortal praise,  
Our offerings shall be onely sprigs of bays;  
And if our tears will needs their brinks out-fly,  
We'l weep them forth into an elegy,  
To tell the world, how deep fates wounded wit,  
When Atropos the lovely Lovelace hit!  
How th' active fire, which cloath'd thy gen'rous mind,  
Consum'd the water, and the earth calcin'd  
Untill a stronger heat by death was given,  
Which sublimated thy poor soul to heaven.  
Thou knew'st right well to guide the warlike steed,  
And yet could'st court the Muses with full speed  
And such success, that the inspiring Nine  
Have fill'd their Thespian fountain so with brine.  
Henceforth we can expect no lyrick lay,  
But biting satyres through the world must stray.  
Bellona joyns with fair Erato too,  
And with the Destinies do keep adoe,  
Whom thus she queries: could not you awhile  
Reprive his life, until another file

Of poems such as these had been drawn up?  
The fates reply'd that thou wert taken up,  
A sacrifice unto the deities;  
Since things most perfect please their holy eyes,  
And that no other victim could be found  
With so much learning and true virtue crown'd.  
Since it is so, in peace for ever rest;  
Tis very just that God should have the best.  
Sym. Ognell M.D. Coningbrens.

## ON MY BROTHER.

Lovelace is dead! then let the world return  
To its first chaos, muffled in its urn;  
The stars and elements together lye,  
Drench'd in perpetual obscurity,  
And the whole machine in confusion be,  
As immethodick as an anarchie.  
May the great eye of day weep out his light,  
Pale Cynthia leave the regiment of night,  
The galaxia, all in sables dight,  
Send forth no corruscations to our sight,  
The Sister-Graces and the sacred Nine,  
Statu'd with grief, attend upon his shrine,  
Whose worth, whose loss, should we but truly rate,  
'Twould puzzle our arithmetic to state  
Th' accmpt of vertu's so transcendent high,  
Number and value reach infinity.  
Did I pronounce him dead! no, no! he lives,  
And from his aromatique cell he gives  
Spice-breathed fumes, whose odoriferous scent  
(In zephre-gales which never can be spent)  
Doth spread it self abroad, and much out-vies  
The eastern bird in her self-sacrifice;  
Or Father Phoebus, who to th' world derives  
Such various and such multiformed lives,  
Took notice that brave Lovelace did inspire  
The universe with his Promethean fire,  
And snatcht him hence, before his thread was spun,  
En'ving that here should be another Sun. T. L.<113.1>

<113.1> Thomas Lovelace, one of the poet's brothers.

## ON THE DEATH OF MY DEAR BROTHER.

### EPITAPH.

Tread (reader) gently, gently ore  
The happy dust beneath this floor:  
For in this narrow vault is set  
An alablaster cabinet,  
Wherein both arts and arms were put,  
Like Homers Iliads in a nut,  
Till Death with slow and easie pace  
Snatcht the bright jewell from the case;  
And now, transform'd, he doth arise  
A constellation in the skies,  
Teaching the blinded world the way,  
Through night, to startle into day:  
And shipwrackt shades, with steady hand,  
He steers unto th' Elizian land.

Dudley Posthumus-Lovelace.

THE END.

Comments on the preparation of the E-Text:

#### **ANGLE BRACKETS:**

Any place where angle brackets are used, i.e. < >, it is a change made during the preparation of this E-Text. The original printed book did not use this character at all.

#### **SQUARE BRACKETS:**

The square brackets, i.e. [ ] are copied from the printed book, without change.

#### **FOOTNOTES:**

For this E-Text version of the book, the footnotes have been consolidated at the end of each section of the introduction, and at the end of each poem.

Numbering of the footnotes has been changed, and each footnote is given a unique identity in the form <XX.YY>, where XX is a poem or a section of the introduction, and YY is the number of the note within that poem or section.

Some footnote markers are missing. I have inserted markers where I believe they should go. All such markers are identified by double brackets. e.g. <<9.2>>

There were 5 footnotes in an "Additional Notes" section of the book, and one footnote in the Table of Contents. These footnotes have been identified as <<AN.1>> to <<AN.5>> and <<TOC.1>>. They have been moved to the end of the appropriate sections of the E-Text, and footnote markers, identified by double angle brackets, i.e. << >> have been added. The original locations of these footnotes in the body text, however, are also indicated for information.

#### **LATIN AND GREEK POEMS:**

This E-Text contains some poems in Latin and in Greek.

The Latin poems are reproduced as they appear in the book, except that the accent marks have been deleted.

The Greek poems were originally typeset in Greek characters. For this E-Text, the Greek characters have been TRANSLITERATED into Roman characters, using a system developed for the US Library of Congress, Ref.

ALA-LC ROMANIZATION TABLES  
TRANSLITERATION SCHEMES FOR NON-ROMAN SCRIPTS  
Approved by the Library of Congress and the American Library  
Association  
Tables compiled and edited by Randall K. Barry  
Network Development and MARC Standards Office  
Library of Congress, Washington, 1991

Again, it was necessary to delete the accent marks, this time accents which were recommended to be placed over the roman characters. The Greek poems are set off by angle brackets.

Single Greek words embedded in roman text have also been transliterated, as described above, and are identified by double angle brackets, e.g. <<eulikrines>>

#### **SPELLING:**

I have made no spelling corrections whatsoever. In the poems, the spelling is very inconsistent, with several different versions of a word being used in different places

#### **OTHER PROBLEMS WITH THE TEXT:**

In a few places, the capital 'V' and 'I' characters were used where we would use a capital 'U' of 'J'

instead. These have not been changed. For example, Vnlese, Iuvenal. Where the capitals in the original text were used to highlight the first word of a poem, 'V' was changed to 'v', for example, OVR became Ovr.

The copy of the book which I worked from had been re-bound on several occasions. It is possible that the 'Table of Contents' was originally placed after the introduction.

#### CHANGES TO THE TEXT:

Symbols for British currency are changed to <pounds>, <shillings>, and <pence>.

In several places the word 'the' appears with an accent mark over the 'e'. The accent is in the form of a horizontal line above the letter. This word has been rendered as '<thee>'. Similarly 'whe' with an accent over the 'e' is rendered as '<whee>'.

\*\*\* END OF THE PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK LUCASTA \*\*\*

Updated editions will replace the previous one—the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from print editions not protected by U.S. copyright law means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG™ concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for an eBook, except by following the terms of the trademark license, including paying royalties for use of the Project Gutenberg trademark. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the trademark license is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. Project Gutenberg eBooks may be modified and printed and given away—you may do practically ANYTHING in the United States with eBooks not protected by U.S. copyright law. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

### START: FULL LICENSE THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

To protect the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase “Project Gutenberg”), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg™ License available with this file or online at [www.gutenberg.org/license](http://www.gutenberg.org/license).

#### **Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works**

1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg™ electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B. “Project Gutenberg” is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg™ electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg™ electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation (“the Foundation” or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is unprotected by copyright law in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg™ mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg™ works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg™ name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg™ License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg™ work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country other than the United States.

1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg™ License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg™ work (any work on which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” appears, or with which the phrase “Project Gutenberg” is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere in the United States and most other parts of the world at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org). If you are not located in the United States, you will have to check the laws of the country where you are located before using this eBook.

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is derived from texts not protected by U.S. copyright law (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase “Project Gutenberg” associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg™ trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg™ electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg™ License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg™ License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg™.

1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1 with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg™ License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg™ work in a format other than “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg™ website ([www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org)), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original “Plain Vanilla ASCII” or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg™ License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg™ works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg™ electronic works provided that:

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg™ works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, “Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation.”
- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg™ License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg™ works.
- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.
- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg™ works.

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the manager of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread works not protected by U.S. copyright law in creating the Project Gutenberg™ collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain “Defects,” such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the “Right of Replacement or Refund” described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg™ trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg™ electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH 1.F.3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH DAMAGE.

1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you ‘AS-IS’, WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg™ electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg™ work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg™ work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

## **Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg™**

Project Gutenberg™ is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need are critical to reaching Project Gutenberg™’s goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg™ collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg™ and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation information page at [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org).

## **Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation**

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non-profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by

the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887. Email contact links and up to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's website and official page at [www.gutenberg.org/contact](http://www.gutenberg.org/contact)

#### **Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation**

Project Gutenberg™ depends upon and cannot survive without widespread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine-readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations (\$1 to \$5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit [www.gutenberg.org/donate](http://www.gutenberg.org/donate).

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: [www.gutenberg.org/donate](http://www.gutenberg.org/donate)

#### **Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg™ electronic works**

Professor Michael S. Hart was the originator of the Project Gutenberg™ concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For forty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg™ eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg™ eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as not protected by copyright in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Most people start at our website which has the main PG search facility: [www.gutenberg.org](http://www.gutenberg.org).

This website includes information about Project Gutenberg™, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.